lang="en">

Riaru de Reberu Age Ch 1-52

Table of Contents

1. Chapter 1
2. Chapter 2
3. Chapter 3
4. Chapter 4
5. Chapter 5
6. Chapter 6
7. Chapter 7
8. Chapter 8
9. Chapter 9
10. Chapter 10
11. Chapter 11
12. Chapter 12
13. Chapter 13
14. Chapter 14
15. Chapter 15
16. Chapter 16
17. Chapter 17
18. Chapter 18
19. Chapter 19
20. Chapter 20
21. Chapter 21
22. Chapter 22
23. Chapter 23
24. Chapter 24
25. Chapter 25
26. Chapter 26

27. Chapter 27
28. Chapter 28
29. Chapter 29
30. Chapter 30
31. Chapter 31
32. Chapter 32
33. Chapter 33
34. Chapter 34
35. Chapter 35
36. Chapter 36
37. Chapter 37
38. Chapter 38
39. Chapter 39
40. Chapter 40
41. Chapter 41
42. Chapter 42
43. Chapter 43
44. Chapter 44
45. Chapter 45
46. Chapter 46
47. Chapter 47
48. Chapter 48
49. Chapter 49
50. Chapter 50
51. Chapter 51
52. Chapter 52

Chapter 1

Chapter 2: The High and Lows of a Leveling Game

Digging a hole and burying the hole.

Digging the hole, and burying that hole.

Digging up the hole that was just buried, and then proceeding to fill it up again.

That was plenty of useless actions……The point is that the act itself is a futile conduct to repeat. The act rivals putting particles of dandelion (a type of flower that can break into very small pieces) on top of slices of raw sashimi (Japanese raw fish), it's the kind of act that can make you go insane. Most likely due to the destructive power of such monotonous acts to the mind, it was used as a form of prison punishment in some far away country.

Right now, such a thing was intently done by a lone young boy,

at night, in a small park just around the neighborhood residence.

Recent social conditions are reflected in the entrance of the park, the signs displayed things like "playing ball is prohibited" or "idle chatting is prohibited" there was plenty of other signs up to 77 of them. It would make more sense and convey the message quicker if they had a single sign stating "This is a restricted area – Do not enter", it would seem that thinking about such things is pointless,

and the existence of the 77 signs seems to be a complete waste of tax payer's money.

Inside the park Natsuno Taiyo was there.

He performed an action that was not restricted by the signboards.

Bringing a large winter shovel meant for digging up snow, he was in the middle of the sandpit digging a hole.

Digging a hole, and then filling it up.

Digging a hole, and then filling it up.

Digging up the hole that was just filled, and proceeding to cover it up again.

The act that can only be defined as a useless conduct, was whole heartedly performed by this young man.

Naturally……. This futile act was not part of the 77 prohibited acts displayed in the sign boards.

At least for now.

The more he digs, he feels that there seems to be something collecting within the depths of his body.

Whenever he fills up the hole, he feels that something begins to accumulate within his mind.

Taiyo continues to dig and cover up the holes in the pit.

Zaku Zaku, Zaku Zaku Zaku…….. (Sound of him digging)

「Hey you there, can I talk to you for a moment?」

Around the time that his brain fluids was about to burst out from his pointless actions, Taiyo suddenly hears a voice calling out to him, in the next instant a bright light illuminates his face. Faced with the sudden dazzling light, he narrowed his eyes, raised his hand to his face and averts his eyes from the light.

「What is it? —-oh, a Policeman?」

Although an irritated voice was raised, it was quickly replaced with a startled voice.

The person that stood there wore a deep blue uniform with an officer cap/hat. He was a public servant for the government, in other words he was a police officer.

If it was a woman, in other words if the other party was a police woman, Taiyo may have become excited or even happy. However, this person was a man and Taiyo's interest in a man can be compared to a water flea's snot! Quickly, his mood became sullenly.

He was unhappy because the flash light that was shone on his face was too bright and the fact that his actions had been interrupted.

「Wha, what is it? 」

「You, what are you doing here exactly? 」

「What am i doing?…..ahh」

At the policeman's question, Taiyo was at a loss for words.

He looked around his surroundings in order to think of a retort. He thought to shout out "You got a complaint?!" as a reply, but quickly realised the position he was in and what he was carrying with him, furthermore the actions he was performing right before the policeman arrived, from an objective point of view was indeed very odd.

Because of this, the vigour/confidence he had before very quickly withered away.

「Ehhh…….Ummmm….」

「Yeah? 」

「That is, I mean……」

「Hurry up and spit it out, what exactly where you doing? 」

「The hole….. I was digging a hole, yeah that's it……」

It was hard for Taiyo to articulate his words and his mouth felt like it jammed up.

After hearing that explanation the policeman whom was usually suspicious under normal circumstances, puckered his eye brows even further, to the extent that he could probably grab a stack of papers just with his eyebrows alone.

The policeman used his flash light to illuminate both Taiyo's face and also at the hole he dug alternating between comparing the two.

「What were you digging up? or were you burying something?」

「Eh? no! no! I wasn't burying anything! 」

At the sudden accusatory tone Taiyo became completely flustered.

From the policeman's question he began to imagine all sorts of scenarios. A person in the rain with an umbrella digging up a hole for a dead body……using fire to burn the evidence those kinds of scenes played out in his head.

In the direction this conversation was going, there was no doubt he will be accused, therefore he was beginning to panic.

「I was only digging, let me show you, it's like this: dig, bury, and dig bury」

In attempt to prove his innocence, Taiyo was reproducing the actions he performed previously. However, the more he proceeded with his actions the policeman's eyes had even more doubt and stared at him like he was a guilty person.

「Reporting in, this is at the third junction in the public park, we have discovered a suspicious person. The culprit is wearing a high school uniform ——」

「Wait a minute! Who are you contacting with your walkie talkie?!」

「You, what's your name? You look like a student but, is that uniform yours? 」

「No no, let me explain, like I said all I was doing was digging and burying the hole, there isn't anything suspicious about that is there?」

「Everyone who is guilty says that at first」

「Please give me one last chance to explain, I haven't got to the end! You have to believe me I really did nothing at all」

「Is that so, now then, will you finally tell me where the real place is? 」

「Like I said, there is no body, I was just digging and burying some sand in the pit」

「Alright, Understood, let's continue this conversation at the police station, shall we? 」

「You completely don't understand what I am saying at all do you?!」

「You can leave the hole as it is, just drop the shovel on the ground, put your hands behind your head and do not resist」

「Already treating me like a criminal!?」

「I will wait until the count of 3」

「No, this is a misunderstanding—-」

In order to make an explanation, Taiyo stabbed his scope into the sand pit.

In that moment—

「TEH REH REH TE TE TE TE—♪ Taiyo-chan has levelled up!!」 (**level up sound effects: Special Illustrations are here**) In front of him a fairy of around 30 centimetres suddenly appeared in front of him.

She had long flowing golden hair and much like the colour of grass, she was wearing a one piece green dress. On her back were wings that she flapped like a butterfly, there is no doubt she is a fairy.

Taiyo was expectantly waiting for her to disclose the information that she came to deliver.

「Ohhh, finally I levelled up?!」

「Yes sir—, you are now Level 3! 」

「Level 3 is it, It took much longer than I expected」

「That's not entirely true〜, Taiyo-chan may have felt that it was a long period of time but, in reality the speed at which you progress is within the 1% of geniuses, On the contrary its absurdly fast ya know〜 Normally this kind of speed would be a cheat so much so that you would definitely be BANNED」

「Is it really that fast? Well, my speciality is after all levelling up in games」

「Yeah! As expected of Taiyo-chan. You have even been called the Deadly Level Upper〜」(the term deadly was from 必殺 which can mean "bringing certain death", "one hit knockout", "one hit kill" etc.)「That's enough flattery. More importantly I gained an increase in my abilities with this level up right? 」

「Of course, it went up vigorously〜 it's only after you reach around level 90 that your abilities won't improve as much.」

「Unexpectedly there is a game where you can't increase in abilities. In that case, can you please elaborate on this for me? 」

「Certainly. Before that what shall we do about the display mode? Should I just specifically display the abilities that increased or also display the abilities that decreased? 〜」

「There is abilities that decrease? 」

—-He was surprised for only a moment, and then he quickly regained his composure.

「Well, it is true, for example…. if a Zombie Character gains a level his hp may decrease, and if he increases his strength, his speed may also drop」

「That is exactly the case〜」

The fairy's answer was very cheerful, and Taiyo raised his hands to his chin to think about what he just heard.

「In that case, I would like you to display all the changes in abilities, whether they increased or decreased. You can also omit the things that didn't change at all. Can you please do that for me? 」

「Of course I can～ But what a fast decision you made～」

「The game I played yesterday also had this kind of system, I believe it's the best choice to go with」

「I see, I understand. Well then, I will now display your abilities～」

「Alright! Bring it on! 」

After exchanging those words with the fairy, Taiyo made a fist with his hand and did a victory pose, he was very excited to see what changes he would have. To Taiyo, a person whom loves to level up via hard work in games, the moment where he would receive his rewards is his most beloved phase of the game.

Because of this, he completely forgot the position he was currently in. He did something that he would not normally do in ordinary circumstances.

「You, what are you doing? 」

「…….Ehh? 」

He was literally being talked to by the policeman like he was a guilty culprit charged with murder, his line of vision retracted from the fairy currently giving him a report to the direction of the policeman.

「Huh? Isn't this too MUCH of an increase?!」

「Ohhh, There is even this many Guard dogs～」

There was at least 5 policeman standing there, and they proceeding to cautiously surround him.

There was even policeman who had a gun attached to their waists, it was an outrageous situation.

「Ah haha…..」

When Taiyo remembers the actions he took moments ago, he realises how much trouble he is in right now. He alternates looking between the fairy and the policeman.

「They can't see you can they? 」

「Of course! The only one who can see me is only you Taiyo～」

「They must have thought I was talking to myself like a crazy person, Darn it…..」

The fairy answered him promptly, but Taiyo could only think his thoughts inside his mind.

「Hurry up and raise your hands, quickly!」

「I understand, just please don't point your guns at me!」

Whilst surrendering to the policeman and being dragged away…….. Taiyo starts to reminisce his meeting with the fairy.

Chapter 2: The High and Lows of a Leveling Game

Chapter 2

[Chapter 1: The Level up Fairy and the Guard Dogs]

[Chapter 3: And at the Park.....]

Before he met Hera, Taiyou was a very normal high school student.
For exams, he usually studied in the last minute which allowed him to avoid failing. For physical exercise classes he could barely keep up with the track and field students so that he wouldn't be a hindrance. His face was also average looking……Additionally he thought that there was no chance he would get a girlfriend and each year on Valentine's Day and Christmas day he would be alone.

He fantasized about having a childhood friend whom he would promise to marry or it was even alright for him to get summoned to another world by a pink coloured beautiful girl (bishoujou) and getting treated as a pet dog. If those were to happen it would be like hitting a home run for Taiyou. Unfortunately for him there was not a single event that could spark his life. (I think the pink haired girl is a reference to an anime called Zero no Tsukaima)
Therefore as usual today, for him the: sights, taste, smell, feeling and hearing he will experience are going to be just like any normal day…… At least it was supposed to be.

In the morning, Taiyou was wearing his school uniform and walking on his way

to school whilst playing on his smart phone.
He just acquired this smart phone yesterday, and it was advertised from a net source as the newest model as a sturdy phone with a great customer guarantee.

The screen did not have a single scratch, and on the display was female swordsman in a western style fantasy background, this female warrior was moving very fluently whilst fighting a metallic coloured monster. Whilst walking Taiyou effortlessly maneuvered the character, and one after another he defeated the metallic coloured monsters that popped out.
In the corner of his display, his character's level was seen. She was a whopping level 254. For him, the fact his level was so high represented that the game was very close to being cleared.

「Good morning Natsuno, playing that game again? 」(Note: Natsuno is main char, in Japanese people are referred to with their last names for politeness at least until they become very good friends)
「Hm? Oh it's you Nakajima. Good morning」

Because a voice called out to him he raised his face from his phone, and standing next to him he saw his classmate Nakajima Katsuki.
He isn't what you would call a close friend/buddy, Katsuki was just a friendly person in general and he would to talk everyone, Taiyou also got used to Katsuki casually talking to him.
As he keeps walking side by side with Katsuki, he dropped his gaze back to his smart phone and continued to walk.

「What ya playing? …..hang on, you've been playing that one for ages, is that a net game? 」
「Nope, it's just the usual RPG roleplay. There are barely any online functions available on this fellow」(Note: they are both talking in impolite form, so I am also trying to use more casual words instead of rigid ones)
「Hee, Can you really play a normal RPG for such a long period of time? …..Huh, your level is freaking high ?!!」
「It ain't too bad」

Seeing the shocked face of Katsuki, he was pretty satisfied with the reaction he was getting, and he felt a little proud so he responded smugly.

「This game can only go up to a max level of 255 before the counter stops going up. Most likely I think I can do it by tomorrow」
「That so? It seems to take a lot of dedication to level up. That's amazing, if you leveled up that much the last boss must be a piece of cake」
「Eh? There is no such thing as defeating a last boss ya know? 」

Taiyou raised his face and had an expression that said,「What are you on about? 」

「You can't defeat the last boss? Then what's the point of raising your level? 」
「……..Because there is experience points to grind? 」
「I don't understand the point! It's even more confusing than climbing a mountain! 」

Katsuki fiercely pestered Taiyou.

「I mean, if you can't even defeat a last boss, why do you try so hard to raise your level? Is it really that fun? 」
「It's really fun, because when you increase the level in game, you become that much stronger! 」
「Well that fact is true, after all a game is made to be that way」
「That's the reason I am playing」
「???」

Hearing Taiyou's response, Katsuki tilted his head and had a totally confused expression on his face.
Although it wasn't such a complex matter, When Taiyou tried to explain to others in detail all he got was weird looks in return, therefore Taiyou did not explain any further.
He just became silent, and whilst walking, went back to grinding out those experience points.

The female warrior in the game continued to defeat the dark grey colored monsters.
Although the amount of experience this monster gave wasn't that high, this particular monster was easy to defeat, and within this game it was the most time efficient way to grind out experience points.
Although he didn't count properly and cannot say for sure, the amount of times he has defeated this particular monster can be approximated to be over 10,000 times.
Knowing such a fact, rather than a game, it was closer to calling it a chore.
However, Taiyou didn't mind this fact at all.

Even if it was a chore, if it allowed him to raise his level, he would gladly and continuously repeat the action.
He was just that type of human being.

Although Katsuki walked side by side with Taiyou who was focused on his game, for a brief moment. He soon discovered his many close friends, and he raised his hands to wave at them.

「Good morning, Kazane-chan, Kotone-chan and Suzune-chan. Even today the loveliness you three girls display is multiplied by 3! Oh by the way, I happened to overhear the conversation the other day, I heard that because you guys are identical triplets, you guys all like the same guy, is this true?」

Taiyou raised his head and glimpsed at them. The people Katsuki was talking to just then was precisely the three girls. Although they are identical triplets, they are a bit different from other triplets, this is because they are very famous girls. Not only are they really cute, they are very popular and have a celebrity status.

Hearing Katsuki's words, Taiyou thought, if only I could get a girlfriend as beautiful as these girls……but he quickly shook off those thoughts out of his head.
After all he was just the average Joe whilst the other party were very desirable, he thought this privately for second, before he went back into his own game world.

Even at school Taiyou, spends his free time trying to level up.
Even if there was only a minute of break time, he would immediately pull out his smart phone, peta peta pochi pochi (sounds of him pressing buttons on his phone) he would dedicate his time to slaying the same monster with the female warrior over and over.

After long years of arduously leveling up, even when he started a new game he would soon find some sort of leveling loophole whereby he would find and defeat the monster that gave the most experience.
Even now, he found himself the perfect hunting grounds. Which gave him the highest amount of experience points, and he would focus all his efforts on grinding out his levels.
Right after school, the amount of experience he accumulated in his character finally exceeded 99%. He calculated that he could level up every 30 minutes following his crazy methods.
For him clearing a game doesn't entail achieving a completed story or by defeating the final boss, it was about achieving the highest level possible.
In other words, because he was so close to clearing the game in his eyes, his tension naturally rose to the limits.

Just like how he went to school, he took the same path on his way home, he was walking as usual whilst playing on his smart phone.
(Just a bit more…….99.51, 99.52, 99.53……..)
With each monster he defeated he gained 0.01% EXP, in the beginning this piled up very quickly, however, now that he is so close to his goals, every percent was counted down. His heartbeat began to quicken, and he did something he normally wouldn't do, which is confirm each time he gained an experience point.

He became excited, and it became all that could fill his head.

Because of this, the things he would normally do coincidentally slipped from

his mind, and he ended up not doing them.
The thing he was doing until just recently was completely neglected.
That is watching where he was going.

——-DONN! (Crash sound effect)

Suddenly his vision darkens/blurred out, he bumped into something right in front of him, and at the same time a small shriek was heard.
In that moment of excitement, his smart phone slipped from his sweaty hands and vanished.

「ahh……」

His smart phone flew away like a parabola flying through space and he saw all this happening in slow motion.
It's almost as if his world had stopped and a feeling that something bad was about to happen.

He understood that with his intuition, he desperately reached out towards his phone strap with futility.
However, His body could not keep up. Although his brain was in an accelerated state, he was nothing more than a human being.

Slowly his phone strap left his fingers. His intention is to grab his phone, but his body won't react.
Only in his mind was he able to grab his phone. Before long, the smart phone which has exceeded its trajectory, begins to fall down—-
———DOKA ! BAKI BAKI BAKI! (Sound effects of phone tumbling)
The phone which fell into the road, was run over by a truck and smashed into small little pieces, he couldn't believe his eyes nor process the information, so all he could do was stare dumbfounded at the broken pieces.

He did not have a recollection of how he returned to his own room. Before he realized it he was in his own 6 squared one room complex, and the shattered pieces of his smart phone was left on his desk whilst he blankly stared at the pieces.
His most prized possession moved no longer, it was because the damage the phone received was nothing like a cracked glass which resembled a spider's web, it was fatally and thoroughly grind to dust.

Suddenly, something entered his field of vision.
It was the thing that existed on the other side of this table, inside his wooden bookshelf. In that shelf there was a large quantity of games and save data's memory, not only that there was also the previous generation of smart phones which he had used.
All the things had one thing in common, that was, it contained all the data that he had accumulated, and every single smart phone device had a character which was max level in it.
Seeing his prized treasures, the feeling of depression which dropped him to the bottom was replaced with a burning motivation.
He stared intently at his shattered smart phone.

「This time round, I won't fail to raise to the highest level alright!」

This, he pledged. Thereupon, as if was responding to his oath.

「Do you want to increase?」
「Eh?」
「Do you want to increase in level?」

As if he misheard, he was hearing an echo of a woman's voice inside his head.

「Wh, who is it? Who's talking to me?」
「Its' me, It's me, Hey over here～」

It was as if someone was playing tricks on him.

「Where are you, show your form!」

Taiyou rapidly stood up and dashed towards the broom which was nearby in his room, he proceeded to take a vigilant stance with it in hand.

「Okay, Please wait a minute～」

Immediately after, the shattered pieces of phone which were on his table began to glitter/shine. After that, shattered pieces gathered together and spun around in high velocity like a tornado, before long it changed into particles of light. The particle of light continuously merges into a solid like shape……it was turning into something very human like.
If one were to describe it, it was like one of those fantastical beings, the being called a fairy.

Taiyou was completely bewildered and he lost his words. What used to be before his eyes was a real smart phone, but unbelievably it turned into a real living fairy!

Chapter 1: The Level up Fairy and the Guard Dogs

Chapter 3: And at the Park.....

Chapter 3

Chapter 2: The High and Lows of a Leveling Game

Chapter 4: Overflowing After School

「Do you want to increase in level? 」(Hera says the shortened word Reberage “Level Increase”)

「Did you say Level Increase? 」

「That’s right. Ah, could it be you didn’t understand that? “Level Increase” is also known as Leveling Up, or more simply put, it’s when you accumulate enough Experience Points by doing various things in the field in order to Level—」

「That explanation is way too complicated and even harder to understand. Not that I don’t like it but」

He put one hand forward and used it to rub his temple. (Temple as in forehead temple) As of this moment, he really doesn’t know how to react to the situation which just occurred in front of him.

For the time being, let me try pinching my cheeks.

「It hurts」

「What’s the matter? Taiyou-chan is still level 1, so even if you pinch your cheeks you won’t get any experience you know? ～」

「I know that doing this sort of thing won't increase my experience points…… the better question is, you, what are you exactly? 」

「Me? I am the Level Fairy, My name is Hera. ah, just letting you know I'm the Level Fairy, not the Level Deity, therefore, don't get any weird ideas about doing any ecchi pranks on me kay～?」

「Sorry, I am below 18 years of age, so I don't really understand that kind of material」

Taiyou had very distant eyes. Contrary to his words, his mind was still filled with the trauma of not being able to raise his female swordsman's to the max level.

「Is that really so? However, I am really happy that you aren't going to play any mean tricks on —– muah! 」(muah = "me" said in a really cutesy way)

Taiyou grabbed Hera and began to touch all over her body.

「What are you doing?! Didn't you just promise me you wouldn't do anything ecchi? 」

「Ahh, I had to make sure that you were real. I thought your body may not have any substance」

「You can touch me ya know, At least Taiyou-chan can」

「Only me? 」

「Yes. Only Taiyou-chan can touch me. Other people cannot see me let alone touch me. Because I am an exclusive being in charge of Taiyou-chan」

「Is that the case? 」

「It's true～. At any rate Taiyou-chan is really composed, this is the first time since I was born that someone was not surprised by seeing me」

「…… Is this, perhaps, one of those punch line jokes, where because this is the first job you had since you were born, you are trying to show redeeming qualities of an experienced worker」

「Biku! 」(Sound effects of Hera shuddering)

Hera's body trembled exaggeratedly.

「I hit it right on the mark, didn't I? Well, I guess this kind of thing happens way too often doesn't it 」

「Taiyou-chan…..You are way to composed」

「I've been told that a lot, when I am angry or when I surprised people tell me that I am so calm that it's disgusting」

「Is that so? 」

「……To put this together, you are some sort of a Fairy, and I have achieved some sort of qualifications, and you are my supervisor which can allow me to gain some level ups, is that a good overview? 」

「That was a lot you had to say….. But that is correct, you understood so quickly this saves me a lot of time～」

「If you were a god, you would probably be able to explain this a lot faster. Well, you are somewhat of a similar race so let's leave it at that」

Taiyou, had a distant look on his face again but for a completely different reason. He had a look on his face that said, I can't believe this is happening to me.

「Nevertheless, why did you choose me? 」

「Umm, it's because of this」

Hera buoyantly/floating over the table and flew towards the wooden book shelf. And she began to softly touch the cleared game data and game software which was on the shelf.

「It's because Taiyou-chan has love/affection～」

「love? 」

「Yes, the love of raising a level. That's why I chose you Taiyou-chan～」

「That's all there is to it? 」

「A person who can continue to carry things out to the extremes, is rare in this world. A person like Taiyou-chan who would complete every single game they played until the max level is like one person in 100 million. In Japan, you are the only one」

「……weirdly enough, that doesn't make me too happy. Well, at least I know the reason now」

Taiyou let out a light sigh.

「So, what do I have to do in order to gain experience points? Do I have to encounter some Yakuza/hoodlums in the vicinity and fight against them? Just letting you know but I am really weak, I won't be able to defeat a goblin let alone a slime」

「It's alright～, gaining experience points is nothing difficult like what you mentioned, in the beginning anyone can do it～…… It's more like doing a repetitive chore/task」

「I am completely used to doing something boring in order to level up, I don't care about that at all. So, what is the task exactly? 」

「Yes～….. ah, something came up just in time～. Its this～」(Note: Hera talks in a cutesy manner so I am adding ~ whenever she ends with なのです)

Saying those things, Hera pointed towards a box under the shelf as if it was her most prized possession. The box was about as big as her, Taiyou grabbed it and took a long hard look at it.

「……..Jenga?」(note: Jenga is a game where players take turns in removing blocks from a tower in order to balance it on top)

「That's right, First off take it out from the box and please arrange/pile it on the table」

「Like this? 」

「Now then, please destroy/demolish it in one go」

「……..Like this? 」

「Once the blocks have all fallen, now please proceed to piling it up again」

「……..Oi, don't tell me? 」

「With this your experience points went up by 1! 」

「Hey! This really is a chore! 」

「That's what I told you, the task is something of a fatigue duty～. What will you do? 」

「No, even so, I will continue to do it」

Taiyou continued to repeat the action. He piled up the blocks, then he tips them over, then he piles it up again and tips them over again.

No matter which angle you saw it from, you would think that what he was doing was a completely useless action.

「…….Do you really think this will increase my level? 」

Suddenly, Hera had a serious look and she listened intently. Taiyou also glanced at Hera in return.

「If I was to talk about this to other random people, let's see….. If I told people that I had memory loss and suddenly discovered I had a miniature fairy as a sister, I would be immediately kicked out of my home, and most likely dragged away by a yellow ambulance (for crazy people).that's because to other people you are an inexplicable life existence. That's pretty much what would happen」

「Is that so～? 」

「Anyhow, you, are you a living life form? Do you need to eat something to survive? 」

「Food? I don't really need to eat anything to live, but I can also choose to eat. My foundations are omnivorous just like a human, I can eat anything a human can, however if it is at all possible, I prefer to eat meals with a low/diluted/sparse salt content」

「Ahhh, so you like Dog Food? 」

「Hey! I am not a dog! 」

「Alright fine, I understand, From now on I will officially call you by the name Hera」

「He……tsu, Wait a moment, isn't that the thing that Taiyou-chan wanted to get so badly, the one that was in front of the station?」(It doesn't state where he gets her name from. Most likely it's a name from a game or maybe the name of one of his characters?)

「Unexpectedly you know various things eh, because you were a level up Fairy I thought that you would only have knowledge about gaming. Even though you were just born today, how do you even remember such things? 」

Whilst Taiyou was continuing to pile up and demolish his Jenga blocks, he tried to gain some information out of Hera.

「uuuu…That's cheating, Taiyou-chan is way too composed～」

Whilst he continues his laborious work of piling up and destroying his Jenga blocks for experience points, he tried to ask various questions to Hera in the hopes of gleaming out some sort of useful information, however in the end he didn't really gain anything of value.

After a while, most of the interest he had towards Hera's background was gone.

(More importantly I wonder what happens when I gain a level? and if I achieve the maximum level I wonder what I will be able to do?)

Taiyou is a person whom has always raised his game characters to the maximum level. From his general knowledge of gaming, when a person gains a level they will be able to increase their abilities, and if they hit the maximum level, at the very least they will be an invincible/unrivaled existence within the game.

However, this was the real world, and in normal circumstances he wouldn't even be able to raise his level let alone gain experience points. It was very natural that he thought about these things as he was suddenly given the power to be able to raise a level by Hera, and it made him imagine the endless possibilities.

Whilst thinking of the various possibilities, he continued to pile up and demolish the Jenga blocks for a period of one hour.

「Oh」

Hera awoke with a start, and then as if she was dancing around a tree she jumped up.

「Terere te te te–♪ Taiyou-chan Leveled up! You are now Level 2～」

「Did it finally happen? With that said, it took a pretty long time to raise my level from 1 to 2 didn't it? 」

「That's just how this works～」

「That so. Well, now what? I increased my level after all」

「Yes, various abilities have gone up～ Ah, Taiyou-chan it's your real life abilities that went up you know? It a little bit different from the normal parameters a human would normally increase, but still, various abilities really did increase okay～? 」

「Huh? 」

「And also your cold has disappeared/recovered, your body/skin is gleaming and your nose has cleared up～ 」

「Why is it my cold?! Well it is natural that your status/stats recover when you level up but.」

「Now now～, we will be moving on to the abilities that you gained, okay～」

「Oh, ooo…..」 (I think this is his reaction getting of getting excited : P?)

Taiyou was attacked by a strange sensation. His head was instantly filled with a torrent of information that consisted of characters and numbers which rushed through his field of vision.

「Strength 21, Agility 3, HP……This kind of feels like a great amount of abilities to examine」

Whilst trying to grasp an understanding of his own abilities, he tried to process the information and compare it with his abundant gaming knowledge. It was mostly very similar to the games he usually played so he had an easy time

grasping the main concepts of his increase in abilities.

Incidentally, he saw an ability value that he wasn't familiar with.

「Popularity 1, Charm 0…..Hmm, This feels like reality just hit me in the face」(interestingly, it says Harem (ハーレム) instead of charm but I think the author meant Charm so…)

「Eh? What happened? 」

「Don't worry about it, its nothing.」

Taiyou said this whilst exhaling/sighing. He grasped the concepts of the abilities that he raised in one go, and acknowledged that for a level 1 character, his stats fit the bill…..Reality also hit him hard as, he realized that his popularity and charm were close to non-existent.

However, he was satisfied with this. As he a hobby, rather than increasing an average amount of status points and distributing evenly, he would rather focus on one thing and be great at that thing.

For that purpose, he became motivated more than ever.

「Now then, shall we grind out a bit more? 」

Saying this Taiyou went back to piling up the Jenga blocks, however.

「Ah, that's not right. What you need to do now, to get experience points, now that you have achieved level two is different. Simply put, every level the things you must do to advance will be different～」

「Is that so? Then what do I have to do next? 」

「Umm that is…. Please dig up a hole」

「In this way, in order for him to raise his level, he went towards the park in blissful ignorance, not knowing that a certain policeman was waiting for his arrival.」

Chapter 2: The High and Lows of a Leveling Game

Chapter 4: Overflowing After School

Chapter 4

Chapter 3: And at the Park.....

Chapter 5: Uninvited School Rumble

Night time: On the way home.

Taiyou was completely exhausted. Even though he tried to explain himself, he was taken custody into the police station as he was doing something so suspicious, in the police station he was interrogated thoroughly, but when they investigated from the beginning in reality all he did was dig up some holes and then bury them, therefore no matter how much they examined the scene, all they found was a pile of dirt and couldn't really pin anything on him.

In the end, he was treated as a weird/eccentric person and he got his innocence proven therefore he was able to be liberated from his arrest.

「Darn it…….This is the first time since I was born that I have experienced being treated this way by policeman…….」

「That was a terrible ordeal wasn't it～? Are you going to eat a Katsu Donbori before you go home? 」(Note: Katsu Donbori is a delicious bowl of rice topped with fried pork cutlet, egg, and condiments.)

Hera looked towards Taiyou with a sympathetic gaze, whilst floating delicately beside him.

「I'm not eating! I mean, whose fault do you think this is?…..」

「Mmmmm～」

Hera pondered for a bit.

「Is it by any chance～? Taiyou's Mother～? 」(how adorably kawaii this fairy is)

「Why would it be my mother, whom you have never even seen her face! No matter how we look at this it's clearly your fault! 」

「Eh～ is it me? 」

「The one who made me dig a whole and the one who kept talking to me whilst there was someone right in front of me, wasn't that all you?」

「That's not entirely true, I only taught you how to gain the experience, and giving a report when you level up is my sole purpose in life～ Even Taiyou-chan at that time when you were playing that game and you ambushed by the metal knight from the side and got surprised, you instinctively pressed your panic "defence" button to protect yourself」

「…….When I level up, you can't stop your function of reporting? 」

「It is impossible, it's my instinct～」

「……In that case, in the instance that I am not next to you and you need to report to me can't you wait until you see me? Or more like, can you not talk to me when I am in the presence of others?」

「If it's that much I can do it～」(Note: it seems although she cannot desist from reporting all together, she can still report at a later time)

「In that case, Please do so in the future. If you talk to me in front of others, sooner or later, people will seriously suspect that I have a mental illness and I'll be thrown into hospital.」

「Please be at ease, even in a hospital you can still raise your level～～」

Although she was still talking to me a while ago, somehow, in the middle of her speech Hera has suddenly become silent.

「Hera……? 」

After calling out her name Taiyou was taken aback.

When looking at his surroundings, Taiyou saw the figures of three young girls appearing around the corner, and because Hera was able to sense their presence, he understood that she was immediately adhering to the rules he just set up moments ago.

Furthermore, when he looked closer at the people once more, he remembered seeing them somewhere before…..more than that he realised that he knew these three girls.

「Hayakawa-san」

When he heard that name being said, Taiyou stopped walking and stood in place.

The three girls just around the street corner, were of course, from the Hayakawa family, the triplet sisters. They are very unusual, they were his classmate and they were girls with a celebrity status.

Although they probably know of his existence, they didn't have a particular meaningful point of interaction to be on friendly terms, therefore Taiyou attempted to let them go past him without saying hello.

However, when the girls arrived within 5 metres of him, they stopped walking, and all three of them stared directly at Taiyou.

「Ara」

「Aren't you?…..」

「Natsuno Taiyou」

「He, Hey. Hayakawa-san's are you guys heading home? 」

Although he asks a question, the girls didn't respond back. For some reason or other, the three of them widen their eyes and showed him a bewildered facial expression.

「Hayakawa-san……..?」

「Are you really…… Natsuno Taiyou? 」

「Our Classmate」

「And the person who is always playing games」

「Eh? Yeap, that's me……」

Why are they asking such a question, moreover, why did they go out of their way to stop walking and greet him, Taiyou pondered in his head.

As if they were responding to his question, the three sisters formed a circle and began to privately murmur about something.

They conversation was suddenly put on hold and he couldn't just suddenly leave them now, therefore Taiyou had no other choice but to stand in place, whilst observing what they would do next.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane.

It is as the name suggests they possess the exact same face and are identical triplets.

But if you say they cannot be discerned from each other, that is incorrect. For some reason, although they have the exact same face, their heights were all within 10 centimetres difference of each other. (LOL……)

Kotone looks to be approximately a first year high school girl height, whereas Suzune looks like a middle school girl and Kazane looks like an elementary kid wearing a back pack, she was just that out of place and had a short stature.

Although they had the same face, their heights were totally disproportional, and that actually made them even more famous.

(Nevertheless……They are really pretty/beautiful)

Looking at these girls, he truly thought such a thing in his mind.

No matter which girl, they were cute, and without restraint he could praise all three for their beautiful face and flawless skin, they had striking black obsidian eyes and perfectly arranged lovely lips. When the three are lined up, if you exclude the fact that they had small breasts, they didn't have a single flaw on their bodies, they were Bishoujou's. (**Illustration: Three Sisters Meeting Taiyou After School**)

Whilst the girls were whispering amongst themselves, they would at times flicker their gaze towards Taiyou.

What are they talking about? Taiyou was thinking.

「Taiyou-chan～, Taiyou-chan～」

Hera talked to him. Without turning his gaze towards Hera, Taiyou whispered back.

「What is it? I thought you promised me you wouldn't talk to me in the presence of other people」

「Im sorry～, however there is something I am a little anxious/worried about～」

「What is it? 」

「Are those people, Taiyou-chan's girlfriend? 」

「Ha? 」

Taiyou opened his eyes wide, and he turned his gaze towards Hera.

「What kind of nonsense are you spouting now, you? Of course that isn't the case」

「They aren't? ～ that's a little weird….～」

「……..can you sense some sort of good impression or that kind of parameter from them or something? 」

Just a moment ago Hera displayed to him the abilities he gained whilst leveling in the park, at that moment he remembered something, and he wanted to ask Hera in order to confirm something.

「Nope, It’s just female intuition～」

「it was just your intuition? Opps, I shouted out without thinking」

Taiyou timidly turned to check on the three sisters, luckily the girls were still absorbingly whispering to each other and they didn’t realize at all of the previous slip up Taiyou just made.

However leaving Hera aside, in this situation it seems that not far in the future, he had a feeling the situation will go out of control, therefore he had an overbearing sensation that it would be a good idea to leave right now.

「In that case, Hayakawa-san, I will see you tomorrow at the school」 (he is preparing to leave)

「Ah, Wait a moment」

「We have something to talk to you about」

「3 minutes……1 minute, no all we need is just 30 seconds」

The three sisters who were in a conference discussion of their own shouted out to stop Taiyou from walking away, it would seem that they had a frantic expression.

「Haa, Alright then, if you guys can keep it brief」

In order to comply, the girls quickly closed the gap between them, they went straight to Taiyou with upturned eyes and gazed intently at him. It was the kind of gaze that seemed to be filled with infatuation, and Taiyou who has never in his life experienced such a situation, had his heart beat throbbing.

However, his thumping heart were soon changed to a different kind of feeling.

「「「Please, Go, Out with Us! 」」」

Taiyou spontaneously began to doubt/suspect his hearing.

When he returned home, Taiyou immediately collapsed unto his bed.

He had only been out for several hours, however, there was so many things that happened that he felt completely exhausted. For today, he wanted to just tuck himself in bed and go straight to sleep.

「Taiyou-chan～, Taiyou-chan～」

However Hera was following him around and flying around his ear like an irritating mosquito.

「…….What is it? 」

「Taiyou-chan, you reached level 3 in the park a little while ago, would you like to check the abilities values ～? 」

「……Ahh, now that you say it, I haven't actually seen the changes」

Hearing the fact that he leveled up, some energy/power returned into his tired eyes. He was continuously interrupted by the string of events which consisted of the policeman and the three Hayakawa sisters and he completely forgot about leveling.

He got up from bed, crossed his legs and arms and turned towards Hera's direction.

「Alright, then please tell me about my stats」

「As you wish～」

Requested to fulfill her ultimate role in life, Hera was extremely pleased and responded joyfully, she immediately transferred the knowledge directly to Taiyou's brain which once again were like hurricane of characters flowing into him. Several hours ago in the park the same phenomenon occurred.

Once again he started to check his status one by one.

「As I suspected, it seems my build is like the archetype of a power soldier/combatant/warrior. I also need to examine the rate of increase…… Hey Hera, is my stats high against average standards? Or is it actually low? 」

「I'm Sorry～, I am not too sure about that～」

She spoke in an apologetic manner.

「Is that so, well it's not a big deal, I am happy as long as I am able to level up」

Even if this was just all a big joke and it was all just a game…… As he was thinking these thoughts, suddenly…….

Popularity: 0

Charm: 65535 (This could may well be Harem and or Attractiveness, Not yet

disclosed what this stats actually does)

Even though before, he remembered Popularity being at 1 it now turned to 0, it was something that made him feel pathetic and depressed, however both numbers had changed. Not only that, the other number changed so ridiculously that he doubted his own eyes!

Chapter 3: And at the Park.....

Chapter 5: Uninvited School Rumble

Chapter 5

Chapter 4: Overflowing After School

Chapter 6: The Youth with an Unbalanced Diet

As a new day begins, much like any normal student would do, Taiyou went to school.

He attended a private high school named Orikan, he was in first grade class A. To get to his class room, he needed to enter the school building, go up the stairs and walk to the furthest part of the building that is where he goes to attend school every day.
Until yesterday, he had a very easy going attitude when attending school, he would nonchalantly listen to his lectures and in his free time he would be playing some sort of game whilst levelling up. Without generating any special events his life would continue in a peaceful manner, it was that kind of uninteresting place. However, today was different.

「Natsuno-kun, have you chosen the classes you are going to attend? 」
「Natsuno-kun, if you defeat this mushroom like thing will you gain something called a level? 」
「Natsuno-kun, I completely don’t get how to play this game? 」

A little before homeroom started, the three Hayakawa Sisters found Taiyou on

his way to school, they immediately pulled out their smart phones and surrounded Taiyou. They completely ignored the stares of the surrounding people, and pestered Taiyou with gaming questions.
Taiyou was baffled by this. He thought the three sister's actions were a mystery, the other people in the vicinity started to gather and whisper about something or other, and the girls seems to get closer and closer to him, because of this he was able to experience a fragrant womanly scent coming from the girls.

Like a rich dribble of honey, it was a refreshing citrus like smell, it was a tantalising smell that could melt his brains.
Taiyou whom had no luck with women until now, just being in close proximity with the girls, one part of his body began to have a reaction it shouldn't have. He desperately tried to retain his reasoning, and asked the three sisters.

「Umm…..You guys, what do I owe this pleasure to? 」
「We really want to do the things that you like to do, together」
「Before that, it's completely fine for you to speak to us without honorifics, alright」
「Yeah, it would be nice if you could talk to us in a more carefree manner～」
「Well, even if you say that…… Why did you guys suddenly do this? 」

After exchanging glances with one another, the three sisters began to answer one after another like a relay.

「Do you remember, the thing we said last night? 」
「We are really serious about it」
「We want to do the things you like doing」
「uuuu…..」
「「「Do you dislike……. us three? 」」」

The three sisters had a painful look in their eyes, as they waited expectantly for an answer. Looking at such a facial expression, Taiyou couldn't help but gulp.
If he were asked to clarify whether he disliked them or not, Taiyou could answer with confidence that he most definitely did not hate them.

Certainly, these three women were a little different from the normal twins. If you took their individual photos you wouldn't even be able to suspect that they were different people, however in reality as explained before the three has a

fatal distinction in which their heights were different from each other.
Kotone's height is 150 cm, Suzune was 140 cm and Kazane was like a little red riding hood at a height of 130 cm.
Taiyou didn't really have an idea, why the three sisters suddenly behaved like this, at any rate, it was harder for him to ignore their feelings.

Previously the girls held little favour towards Taiyo. Now they suddenly confessed their love, rather than saying that he didn't like it, it was more like he was jumping in joy deep inside.
Therefore Taiyou decided to honestly answer to their feelings.

「I don't hate you girls, on the contrary, I'm quite happy」
「「「Really?! We are so glad!!」」」
「「「In that case, with us—」」」
「Uwa—」

Taiyou interrupted what the sisters were about to say with his own surprised shout. It was just like what happened last night……Most likely they were about to confess to him again, however if they were to confess inside his classroom, he felt like there would be repercussions, so he attempted to stop them from saying it.

「Its amazing, he's so popular. As expected of my Taiyou-chan〜」

When homeroom break started, lacking any true motives he ran away from the three sisters, and he went in the gymnasium whilst calling out to Hera. Hera's face was full of smiles, but Taiyou on the contrary had a complicated expression on his face.

「Did I really become popular….? 」
「Aren't ya happy〜? Those three……..Kotone, Suzune and Kazane, aren't they really cute girls? Being liked by those cute girls are you somehow displeased? 」
「Those girls are really cute…….I mean even if they weren't cute, being pampered/spoiled by three girls I'm extremely happy, however….. When it's such an obscure/unknown/ambiguous reason and they approached me like today, I instead felt unpleasant 」

Taiyou let out a sigh and looked seriously towards Hera. He suddenly remembered a certain thing.

「Hey, am I unable to see my status unless I level up? 」
「That is not the case, ～ Even if you would like to see your status right now I can bring it up for you～」
「In that case, Please show me one more time」
「Coming right up～」

After her answer of approval, Hera floated into the air and did a back flip. When Taiyou was in the process of thinking, there is probably some kind of meaning to what she was doing, his head was once again flooded with information and numerals. It was exactly the same as last night, the images went directly to his brain and displayed a clear image, much like the sensation you get when having a daydream.
He flew quickly through the irrelevant information such as: Strength and HP, and Taiyou focused on the information he truly desired. He soon found it.

Charm/Harem 65535

「It's probably because of this stat」
「This one is it～…….Eh? 」
「What's wrong? 」
「This is, a little weird～. The numerical value is also weird, it was supposed to go down, but it went up instead～」
「Even though it went down, it went up? —- You, do you know what the previous number was? 」
「I remember it～ if I'm not mistaken charm/harem was at a value of 0～ 」
「If it decreased from 0……So that's how it is, Its Overflow! 」

Taiyou was startled and spoke.
In a game he played awhile back, the numerical had an upper limit and a lower limit, when either side was exceeded, they would instead force the numeral's to flow in reverse. In this scenario the value of charm/harem which was originally at 0 decreased, most likely there is no such thing as a negative value in this world, therefore it reversed and instead became a ridiculously large numeric.

「Aside from that……」

Taiyou took a glimpse at Hera. By guessing, he concluded that the sudden rise in popularity received by the three sisters was because of this fact.

At night, Taiyou aimed to become level 4, his current task this time around was to flip over a one yen coin repeatedly. This time the action is a simple matter, all he needed to do was go to his table and start flipping the 1 yen coin to heads then flip it back to tails, and just do this repeatedly……That was the kind of chore it was.
Although it was a similar type of repetitive duty as yesterday's event in the park, he could do this particular action at home and Taiyou felt really relieved from the fact that he wouldn't have to be "indebted" to the policeman once again.

[Nevertheless, Taiyou-chan is a really serious person isn't he～? You would get a standing ovation from all the American's for your seriousness, ya know～」
「What a false picture you paint! American's wouldn't do such a thing as standing in unison」

Taiyou experienced Goosebumps just imagining the situation.

「More importantly, what do you mean by seriousness? 」
「Well I mean, you are able to continuously perform these meaningless tasks without resting～」
「The one making me do these things is you, ain't it Moreover, not even 3 hours has passed, and if you could level up anyone would do it if they only needed 3 hours」
「Is that so～? 」

Taiyou nodded and with distant eyes he let out a laugh, (sound effect = pfft)

「I used to play this net game, and comparing the amount of time it took to

gain even one level, this is nothing…..」
「Look here/you know what though? Taiyou-chan」
「Un? 」
「In later stages of this process……. When you reach a high level, it may be just as hard as it was in that game ya know〜? 」

Hera had an apologetic look on her face.

「……..All I have to do is just continue to grind it out to level right? And when I gain a level my stats will increase right? 」
「Yes, I can guarantee that—! 」
「In that case, it's all good.」

Taiyou interrupted whatever Hera was about to say with those words. He then returned, to continue to turn his 1 yen coin back from heads to tails and vice versa.
As long as he keeps doing an action he will continue to increase his abilities, which in itself is his obsession and his number one reason for levelling.

In real life there are way too many things in which you can do, but won't be rewarded for it. As a student sure if he studies hard he may be rewarded in the long run, however, even then, all a student can do is to increase his grades. However in a game, the more you increase your level, the higher your abilities will be. In other words, the amount of hard work you put in will inevitably be rewarded.

This is why comparing to the previous work he did yesterday, and knowing that it is a certain fact that he will grow as a person and receive rewards, for Taiyou doing these kinds of repetitive chores has value/merit.
This is why even now he continues to flip his coin repeatedly from head's to tails.

At the same time he was thinking about a completely different thing inside his head.
Kotone, Suzune and Kazane. The three triplet sisters, whom had differing heights.
The three girls really did say, 'Please go out…. with us'. And also this morning the same words were repeated.

This was him genuinely becoming popular, Taiyou was elated and he rejoiced

as he knew he didn't have a genuine/pure personality. If Hera did not exist, he would of assumed that there was a hidden camera somewhere, or some sort of badger game being played on him, Or perhaps, he may have assumed that 'ahhh the earth is probably going to explode and I'm going to die tommorrow' as that would be more likely than getting confessed by the three girls.
However, now he had a real explanation as to why he was so popular he could believe it was true, and it was all due to his status「Charm: 65535」
It wasn't the normal kind of confession. These three girls brazenly stated 「「「Please go out with us!」」」. Considering the high value of the stat, he could somewhat understand why the effects were so exaggerated.

Although he could accept the fact, he had absolutely no idea how to handle it. Before he got his abilities, He had barely any relations with woman, he had never been out on dates before let alone, have any idea what to say to a girl. He really didn't have any of that date experience at all.

「…..ah～」

Suddenly as if she noticed something Hera raised her voice, her eyes and body were turned towards Taiyou's home entrance. In the next moment, in one breath's time the doorbell wrung.
In such a time who could it be? He imagined it to be some sort of telemarketer and simulated how he would decline their offers, he stood up and went towards his entrance and casually opened the door.

What stood before him were the feminine presence of three very cute looking girls wearing casual clothing, they were the three twin sisters.
He was already surprised at their sudden visit, but even more shocking was what they each held in their right hands.

「You guys……What is going on?…..」

What they brought along was, packed to the brim, a poston bag. (Note: basically a luggage bag)

[Chapter 4: Overflowing After School]

[Chapter 6: The Youth with an Unbalanced Diet]

Chapter 6

Chapter 5: Uninvited School Rumble

Chapter 7: Transparent Conversational Space

Taiyou's room: it's a standard one unit bedroom for a single person.

Normally the smell in his room gave subdued and calming atmosphere, now if one were go into his room, they would smell the fragrant scent of the girls which most definitely did not calm him down. (Note: here he uses the words women's odour)

No, it's not entirely correct to use the words a "smelly odour" of women. Although there is not mistake in calling it that, it is inappropriate to call the scent coming from the girls a "smelly odour".

In that case, what would be the best way to describe it? —-Because since he was born, three girls never entered his room like this before, he totally panicked and he couldn't think of any words to describe it.

All his life, the only people of the opposite sex that would have come into his room was just his mother.

Inside his bedroom where the low table was at, three young girls and a youth was sitting in place.

Facing towards Taiyou, the three girls were setting on their knees with a straight posture. The girls had a feverish gaze towards him, their amorous glances were excessively passionate, and when he returned their gaze, it was almost enough to give him a burn!

Taiyou's heart began to rapidly beat, and he was flustered.

「Umm, Hayakawa-san—-」

「My name is Kotone」

「Call me is Suzune」

「Call me Kazane」

「Eh? 」

「Please call us by our first names」

「Not even adding -san? 」(When people become very close, they can remove honorific's, this is the girls method of trying to get closer to him :P)

「Please do so!!」

They had a very first-class tone.

Talking like a relay, they slowly raised bowed whilst pressing three fingers of each hand on the floor.

Surprised by their actions Taiyou quickly raised himself.

「Wai, wait you guys, stop it, raise your heads—」

「「「Before you call our names we aren't going to move from this position」」」

He's not sure how they did do it, but their voices seems to harmoniously come out at the same time.

Because they were so beautifully lined up, he just couldn't refuse their request as he didn't want to let them down.

「In that case….Kazane—-s」

In the last second, just as he was about to use the honorific「-san」, he repressed his words and called Kazane's name out without honorifics.

This is the first time ever, he's called a female within the same age group as

him without any honorifics, and Taiyou felt as if he could not calm down.

Left with such feelings of anxiousness, it did not end there. It would seem that the only one whom raised her face was Kazane.

She watched Taiyou ecstatically, whilst the other two people were still bowing.

Of course he knew without being told, that they were waiting for him to call out their names.

「Kotone—. Suzune—-, please raise your head, I beg of you」

「Yes! 」

「I understand! 」

In this way, the three girls lifted their heads and once again face towards Taiyou.

Just by calling out their names, even though it was such a simple action, Taiyou was exhausted. Even when he was hunting for monsters three nights in a row, he did not feel the amount of fatigue he felt right now.

He thought that if he continued at this pace with the girls, his body would not be able to keep up, thus Taiyou proceeded to question their intentions for their late night visit. (Note: what else are they here for :P, this noob main char…)

「Ummm……May I ask you guys, why did you guys come here for? 」

「We want to live here with you」

Kotone said.

「……Sorry? Can you write that down so I can understand? 」

——We want to be together with you.

Suzune took out a notebook from her luggage, and proceeded to scribble those words.

「Sorry, it would seem that my eyes are also quite bad」

—-Petatsu (Sound effect)

Kazane grabbed Taiyou's hand and put it against her own chest!

「Uwaa—! Wh, Wha, What are you doing?!」

Although the feelings transmitted to the palm of hands were that of a barely developing chest, even then, the stimulus was too strong for Taiyou. He reflexively shook of Kazane's hands, and slithered backwards close to the wall.

「Ummm, it's like that, you still don't understand?」

「It's because we like you」

「We want to live together with you」

「…….I mean, even if you say such a thing so suddenly」

「Are we not allowed?」

「We can do anything, and we are really good at domestic chores/housework」

「If you wish, we can even—」

Kazane's speech was cut half way through and her mouth seemed to freeze up, Almost as if imitating her, the two other sisters simultaneously cast their gaze downwards, whilst having their cheeks dyed red in shame.

Seeing Kazane stop her sentence midway, Taiyou began to think, what kind of words did she have to say? What kind of feelings was she experiencing?

Whilst thinking about such things Taiyou gulped and swallowed his saliva.

If a person of the same sex as him were to ask him these kind of questions, he could just return the question and tell them off by saying "Hmph? Are you kidding me?", However the person asking him the questions were his classmates and most importantly they were the well-known Bishoujo's the Hayakawa family's three sisters.

Expectation was building up inside of Taiyou, but at the same time, he was also baffled by the situation just as equally.

If even after all this, a man does act upon the advances of a woman, he may even be ridiculed as a person destined to die out, However for Taiyou even then he did not for one second think to take advantage of the situation.

The youth named Natsuno Taiyou was a tough nut to crack, he was at the age of his puberty where his hormones would be raging, although this fact just aggravated him even more, Taiyou was a fastidious person and he was very careful about what actions he took.

Coming up until here, he took a complete turn in the opposite direction, instead of being enthusiastic he became nonchalant about the girls staying over.

He let out a sigh and faced the three sisters.

「…….I understand, however there is a condition」

「Yes, understood」

「Hold on a minute」

「We will make preparations-」

「No, on the contrary」

Taiyou declared clearly. The three girls were surprised.

「I'm talking about changing the kind of compensation…..for staying over here」

Even now, the girls were trying to present their bodies to him at any given chance, Taiyou calmly interrupted their words.

He disliked taking advantage of the girls and those kind of exchange conditions.

In the morning, Taiyou could hear distinct and rhythmical sounds of chopping coming from his kitchen, his senses were titillated by the aroma of miso soybeans. Although any of these things should have represented the happiness of a familial life, Taiyou who has never experienced these things took some time to recognise it.

He was inside in his bath tub, which was not filled with water and he was

absentmindedly trying to wake from his stupor. Last night he was sleeping in this tub, so his body ached all over. Because of that he couldn't get much sleep, but, he thought it was much better than sleeping in a cramped room with the three girls.

Last night he refused to sleep together with them, if he were to continue to be in the same space as the girls, without a doubt something irreversible would have happened. For that reason, he took refuge in his own bathroom, and locked the door so the girls could not come in.

It was not as if he disliked the girls, however, he did not have a fondness to the term "repaying favours", especially not in this way.

Taiyou was like a youth in the middle of his puberty, however he also had this weird side to him that was really uptight.

In a world/society where there are various methods in which young men deal with women, for example, young men:

1. Who are not competitive, in the avid pursuit of money and sex and who may also be kind, co-operative and or family-oriented, and on the other end of the spectrum;
2. A man that aggressively pursues sex and money.

If there was a need to give him a classification, for the time being, Taiyou can be classified as a youth who is either: A person that is not by any means, unpopular or a late bloomer, but will only go out with a girl whom he really likes/ falls in love with; OR the type of nerdy person currently more into games then he is into chasing after women (The type of person he is refers to the title "The Youth with an Unbalanced diet" Note: this translated paragraph was extremely hard to process/understand and convert into meaningful language, if there is still confusion please feel free to ask some questions)

If he doesn't like it, no matter how delicious the food, he will not eat it. (referring to no matter how tempting a girl is he won't go for her unless he truly likes her personality)

So that he didn't say anything that could be mistaken. By his own initiative Taiyou escaped towards his bathroom to sleep.

「Good morning, Taiyou-chan～」

Suddenly in front of his eye Hera showed her appearance/presence. As Hera went through the bedroom wall into the bathroom, he recognised that once again she was a fantastical existence whom was a fairy.

「Ahh, Morning. What are the girls up to? 」

From the sound of things he could make a pretty good guess, however, even then he wanted to ask in order to confirm the situation.

「They are making you breakfast～」

Whilst saying “I see” in acknowledgement Taiyou stood up, he then did stretched out his body and cracked his back to relieve the built up tension.

As if they heard the sound of him cracking his body, there was a knock on the bathroom door.

「Excuse me……are you……awake? 」

The voice sounded like a polite inquiry, and he began to think of which of the three sisters the voice belonged to.

Although the girls had distinctive facial features, when only their voice can be heard from the other side of the wall, he could not pinpoint in the slightest who the voice belonged to. He tried to think of the answer, but after a while, he decided to just leave this matter for now.

(I can’t let them find out the fact that I don’t know what they sound like)

Whilst thinking such things, he faced the wall and answered the question.

「Ahh, Is it alright if I come out? 」

「Yes! 」

「Please go right ahead! 」

「Rin-chan, Fuu-chan, if you don’t move backwards the door won’t open」

The voice seemed to belong to Kotone, soon shuffling noises could be heard on the other side of the door. He waited for the noises to quiet down, and then he cautiously opened the door and exited his bathroom.

What was there, was the three sisters lined up side by side, wearing an apron each.

「…….cute」

Taiyou couldn't help but to speak without thinking. Hearing those words, the faces of the three sisters turned bright red.

「Is that really true? 」

「Umm, can you please say that again? 」

「We want you to say it to us individually, alright? 」

The three sisters shuffled even closer to him and lined up in a straight line in front of Taiyou. They lined up like they were little kids in elementary school.

The one at the most front of the line was Kazane, she had sparkling/glittering upturned eyes and was gazing at Taiyou.

Although he was still not used to physical contact with girls, even then, merely telling girls in front of him that they were cute was not a problem to him at all.

Taiyou looked straight into their eyes.

「You are cute, Kazane」

「Fuwaa…..」 (sound effect of her blushing/swooning)

「You are cute, Suzune」

「Haauu……..」

「You are cute, Kotone」

「Ahhh……」

When he repeated the same words individually to them one by one, the girls facial expression was overcome with emotion, and in that spot they slid down into the ground as if their legs lost strength.

Chapter 5: Uninvited School Rumble

Chapter 7: Transparent Conversational Space

Chapter 7

Chapter 6: The Youth with an Unbalanced Diet

Chapter 8: Thirty Students

Taiyou took a different path than the three sisters in order to go to school. Without thinking he instinctually ran away, as he was really, quite a shy/introverted person. Although all he did was look directly into their eyes as he called out their names, nevertheless, for Taiyou whom in the past has had minimal interactions with the opposite sex, it was too much for him to endure.

Furthermore, it was hard to return the girls feelings, when it happened so suddenly. Being liked was a pleasant thing, but, when they unconditionally turn their feelings of love towards him, somewhere in his heart he felt bad for the girls. The complexity of the matters combined with the fact that he was merely a young boy of 16 years, made it even more difficult.

And at the same time, the reason their affection increased, and the reason his mind was plagued by guilt was due to the status point….

Charm: 65535

Several days ago, the three Hayakawa twin sisters were merely his regular classmates, and the main drive and the timing as to why this kind of thing happened was way too coincidental, Taiyou thought that without a doubt it was

because of that ability.

If he raised the value of the stat, to its highest level, through his own hard work, then as a person whom is crazy about levelling, he could confidently raise his chest and be proud of his achievements. However, this time it wasn't like that at all, because of a numerical bug called "overflow" the numbers went crazy……. in other words it was a result that was obtained through pure chance/accident/luck and was truly unfair/unjust. Because he did not feel he gained his ability through his own efforts, he could not willingly accept the advantages it provided.

Many years down the track, the person himself will look back at this event and think to himself, with a bitter smile:

"Why did I make such a fuss about such a small matter, if I think carefully I was so childish back then obsessing and being stubborn over things which have little meaning"

「…..Haaa」

Even so, for the Taiyou that was living in the current timeline it was an important matter. Enough for him to let out a frustrated sigh.

「Good morning Natsuno. Eh? You aren't playing a game? 」

「Oh it's you, Nakajima? Yeah, I have a lot going on…..」

As usual on his way to school, the overly buoyant Katsuki was walking side by side with him, and this made him let out another small sigh.

「What's wrong, somehow you don't seem to be well. Is it some sort of

personal problem? 」

Nakajima wiggled his pinkie finger, and gave a mischievous/impish/roguish smile. “It was exactly because of that!” Taiyou almost wanted to blurt it out, but, the person known as Katsuki was someone who loved to gossip/tease/banter about love matters, he was a person known for such things and he didn’t want the direction of the conversation to go that way. Knowing this fact Taiyou narrowly managed to suppress his outburst.

「No it’s not what you are thinking, it’s because my smart phone broke」

「By smart phone you mean the newest model phone that you just recently bought? 」

「Yeah」

「For reals? Let me see, let me see, did it have a crack on the screen that resembled a spider web? 」

「More than just a cracked screen, its closer to say it was grind to dust. Immediately after dropping it a car ran over it and crushed it to little pieces」

「Wow…….my condolences to you. Is that so, that’s the reason you weren’t playing games today huh」

「…….That’s how it is」

Taiyou felt relieved. For someone like Katsuki who loved to gossip about love relationships, if the matter with the three twin sisters were exposed, it would become an immense/disastrous thing, as much as possible, he wanted to hide such secrets, Taiyou thought.

「Aside from that, seeing Natsuno without a game in hand, even I’m starting to feel weird」

「Is it to that extent? 」

「Yeah, it makes me unable to calm down. It’s like the feeling of seeing a pigeon in front of the station that was afraid to approach the human beings」

「I kind of understand what you are saying but not really……」

Taiyou had a bittersweet smile.

「But you know, even if you don't have your smart phone, can't you still play some sort of game? In actual fact didn't you used to bring a cell phone and play games on that? 」

「It's because that old thing doesn't have the games that I want to play」

「I see」

Whilst Taiyou was glancing at the consenting Katsuki, he was flipping the 1 yen coin in his hand from heads to tails.

Although he said those things, in truth he really didn't smart phones or cell phones to play games. This is because at this moment in the real world he was levelling up, and the only thing he loved about games was the ability to level.

At least whilst he was still able to make progress in real life, he didn't need to play games, nor did he feel a compulsion to play them either.

Another way to put it is, even though he isn't walking with a game in hand, he feels as if he was playing one right now.

「Good morning Aoba-chan! Today you also look really cute having that ponytail on you! 」

Finishing their superficial talk, Katsuki as per his usual actions, went to find his circle of friends, as he naturally separated from Taiyou and rushed towards his friends. When Taiyou's gaze followed the direction Katsuki was going in, there was a really cute girl with a pony tail that was attached to the top of her head.

It wasn't the casual/easy-going kind of pony tail that was arranged, the pony tail was tied in a cocoon like fashion her bangs also flowed down the nape of her neck elegantly, her few strands of hair that managed to escape the cocoon also added to her amorous look, it was as if she painstakingly arranged her hair in a perfect ponytail.

There are many other people in his class with pony tails, however, there was none that could compare to her beauty, most people had disappointing level of intricacy and most just negligently tied their hair in any old fashion.

「Hm? 」

At first, it was just Taiyou one-sidedly admiring her pony tail, but, she

incidentally/suddenly turned her eyes to face him. Although she was just talking about something with Katsuki, for some reason or other she was now intensely staring in his direction.

No, it was more like she was glaring right at him with her eyes!

(Did I, do something bad to her?)

Her glare seemed to be filled with a negative feeling that it was enough to make him reflexively think such things.

He tried to search his memory, but there was nothing he could remember that would cause him to be hated by her, this was the conclusion he came to.

Although she kept her glare at Taiyou for a conceivable period of time, before long her gaze returned to a normal one and she soon went back to chit chatting with Katsuki whilst going on her way to school.

「Then, I must be going, excuse me」

Time: Mid-Morning, Break time.

He was nominated by one of the teachers to be in cleaning duty for his previous period, and Taiyou barely managed to finish his task with little time to spare, and all he got was a light “thank you” by one of the teaching staff before he went out of the faculty room.

「Hello」

When he was returning to his class room he encountered one of the three twin sisters. It was the tallest one Kotone.

「Kotone…….. You are by yourself? 」

As per usual he was awkwardly trying to suppress saying “-san” as he gulped down his words. Taiyou’s image of the girls were that they were a single unit that acted together, when he encountered just one of them in specific, to him it felt almost like he encountered a rare character within a game.

「Yes, I was trying to find you. We didn’t know where you went, so the three of us split up and searched」

「Oh, you guys separated? 」

「Yes, I will call Suzu-chan and Kaza-chan here alright? 」

「Ahh, ok」

Although he gave her his consent, she just stood in place, she continued to look at Taiyou whilst smiling at him and it seemed that she was happy about something.

「……..」

「…….」

「Umm…….Weren't you going to call the other two? 」

He wasn't really comfortable with pressing the matter but, even more than that he was a little weirded out by her behaviour that he asked without thinking.

「I already called them」

「Eh? Did you do something? 」

「Yes, I became delighted」

「…….Hm? 」

Taiyou tiled his head in confusion. He was trying to imagine/think of situations that he encountered before that would clarify the matter, but he couldn't pin point any certain thing and he inadvertently tilted his neck in confusion.

「Like I said, I became really happy. Because I became really happy, Suzu-chan and Kaza-chan will be able to know that I found you」

「Don't tell me, Is this Telepathy? 」

「It most likely is, Even we don't really know how it works. However, we can kind of convey/transmit to each other what kind of feelings we are individually experiencing.」

「Hee–」 (a way Japanese people acknowledge something)

Taiyou spontaneously leaked out a voice of admiration. Although the person in question doesn't really understand how her ability works, but if they are actually able to convey each other's feelings from such a distance then most likely it was a type of telepathy.

The twin triplets that were deeply connected with each other's feelings, that kind of telepathy. For Taiyou this matter was extremely interesting…..In a good kind of way, it sparked his interest in them.

「May I, ask various questions regarding this matter? 」

「Yes, of course」

As he received Kotone's consent, Taiyou wanted to ask her various questions whilst walking, thus he started in the direction of his class room and began to converse with her along the way.

「Is the connection, merely based on feelings? Or can you use words….to converse with each other in your mind? 」

「We used to able to do such things when we were kids」

Kotone said that with an apologetic face.

「However now we can't do such things any longer, please forgive me」

「No it's not really anything you should apologize for. So now its only feelings that get transmitted? Can you clearly send the feelings across? 」

「Yes, if it's just that we can transmit it clearly. In actuality, it is closer to say that we share joint ownership of each other's feelings. We are unable to hide each other's feelings. When we get worked up or excited our feelings get transmitted with each other without permission」

「So it just leaks out? 」

「Yes, the feelings between us that is」

「That's amazing, this ability. As expected of you three twins. Ah, but if that's the case….」

Whilst walking Taiyou held his hand to his jaw, and puckered his eye brows in reflection/deliberation.

「If that's the case, what? 」

「Ahh, I'm not too sure but I believe in your case, your hearts are linked because there is no barrier. I think, because your hearts are always connected, It amplifies…… the effects of what you experience on your actual body more than

you know it, just like how your minds can share emotions your body seems to also transmit its feelings. However back in the days you used to be able to have a conversation within your minds but now you lost touch with the ability, I think it may be caused by a side effect of you sisters growing apart? If that was the case, I believe it's a bit of a shame.」

「It's a shame/waste? 」

Kotone opened her eyes widely and stared at Taiyou with an astonished expression.

「Yeah, Sorry I spoke out of turn, please forget what I said just now」

Taiyou waves his hands in panic, and he had an apologetic face.

For the sisters who had the power of telepathy. He thought that this was an immensely adventurous/exciting conversational topic. But this is probably only what he thought, it could be that the person in question themselves did not find this topic to be interesting in the slightest.

For twins or triplets in general this was most likely a touchy/sensitive topic to talk about, but instead Taiyou was pestering her and asking her all these sensitive questions.

Suddenly, Kotone spoke aloud and stood still/stopped moving. She had a surprised look on her face and when Taiyou followed her gaze, at the end of the corridor a lone young woman stood in place, and was staring directly at them.

「You are?……. This morning's…..」

It was a figure he remembered seeing before, the person who was talking to Katsuki, the figure of a girl with the perfectly styled pony tail. Just like the time when he encountered her in the morning she was still glaring right at Taiyou.

「Ummm, you are?—

「Natsuno Taiyou, you, which of the three Hayakawa-san's do you like the most?」

Before he could even complete his words, Taiyou was interrupted by the girl, she then proceeded to make this shocking declaration!

Chapter 6: The Youth with an Unbalanced Diet

Chapter 8: Thirty Students

Chapter 8

Chapter 7: Transparent Conversational Space

Chapter 9: Let's Go With Muscle

「Miyagi-san」

「Miyagi-san? 」

Miyagi didn’t respond to her name being called via words, instead all she did was turn to the person whom spoke to her which was Kotone and looked at her with absentminded eyes.

「Yes, Miyagi Aoba-san, was one of my classmates back in the day」 (Kotone speaking) 「Is that so? umm……Miyagi-san?」(Taiyou speaking)

Taiyou called out towards Miyagi in an inquisitive voice. Thereupon her wrath filled gaze, was raised by one level in intensity.

What was she so angry about I wonder?, Taiyou thought that, he shouldn’t have done even a single thing to offend her in the slightest, however, in the next instant he recalled the words spoken by Aoba and he formulated some sort of understanding “ahh so that’s what this is about”.

——-Out of the three Hayakawa-san’s, which do you like the most?

Yesterday, the three sisters were talking quite intimately with him in the

classroom.

From the get go, they were asking Taiyou questions about the games he was playing, and the crowd could somehow accept the fact that they were asking advice from Taiyou considering his special knowledge in the matter, however, the fact that the three sisters were all vying for his attentions was something everyone felt was weird/unusual/ridiculous.

Simply put, the three sisters were practically swooning all over him. The fact that the three sisters merely used the game as a pretext for approaching Taiyou….. Was so blatantly apparent that even a natural airhead would be able to figure that out.

The fact that the three sisters, no longer saw Taiyou as just a regular classmate became so wide spread that the entire school heard the rumours before school even finished.

Three famous sisters, the identical triplets.

Within the school, the sisters were existences accepted as some sort of a celebrity personality. Consequently, the rumour spread like wildfire.

“The three were making some moves on a single man.”

In order to extract the truth from those words, a certain person game to interrogate him.

(Even so, her hostility is so fierce I can almost feel it on my skin……Oh well, let’s leave it at that) 「I’ll ask you once again, you, which of the three sisters do you like the most? 」

Aoba repeated her words a second time, without hiding any of the indignation she felt towards Taiyou.

「Rather than who I like the most, it’s more like…….」

「You won’t say you like them all equally right? 」

「If I may be bold/daring that is what I meant to say……」

This was his true opinions.

For now he hadn’t know the girls long enough to find a distinctive component which could clearly differentiate which girl he liked the most. The three girls had the same face, and the amount of time he spent with each individual is about the same. If a favourability/likability factor was converted into numericals, Taiyou predicted that they would all be the same number.

That’s why he answered in that manner, however, it would seem it did not meet up to Aoba’s standards.

「You’re the worst! 」

「Eh? 」

「You are that kind of guy aren’t you? You are just fooling around with their feelings and trying to have an affair with them!!」

「No, I haven’t done anything to them…..」

「Hayakawa-san! 」

「Eh? Yes? 」

「Are you ok with that? As you just heard, this is the kind of man he is」

Hearing Aoba’s question, Kotone looks unblinkingly at Taiyou.

「Are we really, all liked equally? 」

「Yeah, that’s how it is」

「Thank you, this is why we like you」

「ehhhhhh? 」

Aoba raised her voice in a bewildered shriek.

「Are you insane? That guy, he's clearly just playing around with the three of you? 」

「No, in my case, I'm not just playing around」

「What did you just say? 」

Aoba gave Taiyou a stern look. However, Taiyou was indifferent towards Aoba's reaction, and he looked towards Kotone and began to talk to her.

「From the previous talk we just had, I'd like to clarify, due to your circumstances, is there even such a thing like "differential treatment"? 」

「What do you mean? 」

「What I mean is, do you guys think of yourselves as one entity? Or three separated individualistic entities? 」

「Ummmm…..」

Kotone tilted her neck and was trying to think.

Apparently, this question was never considered by her before, and this is the main reason that it would be impossible to give and answer and choose a single one of them especially at this early point in time.

☆

Whilst in the middle of class, Taiyou was turning over his 1 yen coin above his opened text book. When he was using his smart phone to level his characters in the game, it was not possible to play his games during class and it made him slightly unsatisfied.

But now he didn't need to worry, and he was happy with the fact that he could continue accumulate experience points. This is because all he was really doing was just flipping the coin from heads to tails over and over, it wasn't anything overly fancy and even the teachers can't really make out a complaint.

Even other students would do similar type of actions, it was like the steady action of spinning pens in class.

Whilst doing this action, Taiyou was looking around inside his classroom.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane.

The three of them were lacking in uniformity and each of them were absentmindedly staring into space It was the kind of situation where, they had their textbook's out and notes open, but even so the sharp pen's in their hands stopped moving and they weren't listening to the lecture. It was clear that they were thinking deeply about something.

(Were they thinking about what I said to Kotone earlier?) Taiyou was feeling a slight sense of responsibility as the one who asked the question.

He didn't know whether the statement he made towards the girls, was good or bad, but that was for the girls to decide, and Taiyou didn't have any power in the matter. However, without a doubt it was his brief comment that made the girls become troubled.

Making them feel troubled/worried, he felt a sense of responsibility towards them.

When he was just in the process of thinking, "what should I do about this?"…….. Hera appeared out of thin air. It was as if she instantly teleported in front of him, in front of a spatial area that had nothing, she suddenly blinked into existence. (Goku style teleportation) She was floating delicately, but she just fluttered there silently whilst looking at Taiyou.

Level Up!

Those words surfaced into his mind.

「Teacher! I have a sore stomach please let me go to the toilet」

After having said that, without even caring about his classmates attention. Taiyou dashed out of the classroom. Hera was keeping true to her promise, and only after they entered an unpopulated corridor did she begin to open her mouth.

「Te re re te te te—♪ Taiyou-chan levelled up! ~」

「So it finally happened! I'm level 4 aren't I」

「Yeah—. You became stronger again Taiyou-chan~」

「Wait a moment, let's move to a more secure place so that we can confirm」

He ran through the corridor, went to the stairs located in the interior part of the building and began to climb rapidly into the rooftop, this was a place where nobody seemed to visit.

Under the clear blue skies, he turned towards Hera who was following right behind him.

「Alright, show me my status」

「Roger that~, nanodesu」

In response Hera began her whirling dance in mid-air. Taiyou lay his back straight on the rooftop ground and closed his eyes, as the torrent of numerical values went straight into his brain.

He immediately concentrated on the numerical value he was most anxious about and tried to make it appear.

「Popularity is 0, Charm is 65535 so I see it hasn't changed」

「Yes～」

「Well, then that's good I suppose」

Taiyou said this in a disappointed manner.

Well for him this was naturally the case, the figures started with 1 and 0, but when it reduced from 0 , the Charm value was instead overflowed and increased to an unimaginable league. He was anticipating/expecting that when he levelled, his values could decrease further or even that the bug may go the other way and his values would reset back to 0.

「I would like to confirm, these two values, none of them has changed right? 」

「Yeah～, both these values were unaffected～」

「I understand」

He nodded at Hera's response and he put these matters at the back of his mind for now, he then proceeded to check the other numeric values.

Although he levelled up the other values barely moved at all, it was to a pathetic degree that each value only increased by a maximum of 1.

Although there was one particular status value that showed high prominence.

The strength/power value, was raised from a value of 6 to a value of 30!

「So that's how it is」

After he finished checking his values, Taiyou slowly opens his eye lids.

「As I predicted, I'm some sort of power specialised character, the way in which my stats increase seems to confirm this. Yeah」

Taiyou inclines his head.

「Is there something bad about it? 」

「It's not really something bad per say, but it's more like, how do I explain it…. In an offline game a character who specialises in strength will be effective immediately and be battle ready as a valuable war potential. however in comparison to that, Whilst strength is important in an online game, rather than having an all rounded character it is much more stronger to focus your abilities in one category」

「Is that so? ～」

「When the environment changes….. The hypothesis is that the type of specialisation that is advantageous will also change. And I was pondering which of the stats are good to focus on in real life.」

「I believe in Taiyou-chan, so no matter what stat you focus on I think you will become strong～. You will immediately become battle-ready, and continue to become stronger until the end～」

「If that was true, it would be nice」

Hera was trying to encourage/cheer on Taiyou with such innocence that Taiyou could only put on a wry smile, if it was really true, it would be great he thought.

「Well, even though my strength has increased, I don't actually feel any difference in my body. To begin with, a value of 30 how much stronger is that in human terms? 」

「I'm sorry, I am not knowledgeable in that matter～」

Hera looked pitiful when she realised she couldn't help. Seeing this Taiyou tried

to cheer her up.

「That’s alright, Even though there aren’t any apparent results yet, being able to increase my level like this is really fun, so don’t worry too much」

「Yes～.....」

「More importantly what is the next task I need to accomplish in order to level? 」

「Yes! Umm it is～.....」

Hera was folding her arms and thinking. Taiyou thought she was feeling down, but in the next second, she was already recovered. Seeing her like this, it reminded Taiyou of playing with a cute small animal, it gave him a pleasant feeling.

Whilst having a small smile that slightly raised the corners of his mouth, he stood up and went to turn the door lever, however—— BAKI! (Sound effect)

A loud sound was heard, and Taiyou fell backwards.

He did not comprehend what just occurred, Taiyou fell onto his bottom and it took a while for him to digest what really transpired, but, it turns out that inside his hands was, precisely, the door lever that broke off!

Chapter 7: Transparent Conversational Space

Chapter 9: Let's Go With Muscle

Chapter 9

Chapter 8: Thirty Students

Chapter 10: Twelve Islands

At the Park in the Evening: Taiyou was sitting on a wooden bench. Hera's face suddenly popped out, from inside the vinyl convenience store bag that was beside him. (Note: wild Pikachu detected!)

「Pass me the next apple」

Gushiyaa! (Sound effect of apple being crushed)

「Steel canned coffee」 (It is steel this is not a typo, he's just that strong :P)

Meri, Baki Baki! (*rip rip*, *snap, crush*)

「Champion Magazine」

BiriBiriBiri! (*rip, rip, rip*)

Hera passes to him the items inside his convenience store bag one by one, at times he would crush the contents and at other times he would rip it into pieces.

Fruits are squished, metallic cans are crushed, and although it was a minor amount of experience points, he even started ripping out the bestselling manga magazines without a shred of mercy.

He looked upon the mountainous of remains from his excessive destruction and Taiyou became very astonished.

「What a terrifying amount of power….」

「Yes～, as expected of my Taiyou-chan～」

「Don't tell me, is this……」

「Yes, of course～, it's because Taiyou-chan's strength/power has increased～」

「As I thought…….So this is what 30 strength feels like」

Taiyou opened both his hands, and whilst gazing at his palms, he opened and closed them. The appearance of his hands did not change in the slightest but, hidden inside was a crazy amount of power that was exceeding anything a mere high school student could exert.

「I really didn't believe that by leveling I could grow stronger in real life」

「Muka!」(note: Pout)

Hera jumped out of the plastic bag and was huffy/angry.

「Taiyou-chan, you didn't believe in my words?」

「Well, I was half convinced & half dubious. I mean…..All that I have been doing up till now was stacking up some Jenga blocks and making them fall, digging up holes and burying them, and turning over my 1 yen coin from heads to tails……..Those kinds of ridiculous things you know? Normally people wouldn't think that they would get an increase in abilities just from doing those mediocre tasks right?」

「Even so, Taiyou-chan is a meanie～. You need to believe in me more～, that way I can help you more often, kay～」

「Where did a goddess like you come from…….Even if I don't want to, It has gone to the point where I can't not believe in you」(basically he's saying he believes in her… the double negatives strikes again)

Taiyou stood up from the bench, and he approached a tree that was planted within the park. It was a tree big enough for a fully grown man to wrap his arms

around it.

Taiyou was thinking of applying a small amount of power to the trunk of the tree with his hand. When he did this, the tips of his fingers sunk into the tree and made an indentation/holes that was distinctly apparent on the tree.

He wanted to try out something he once saw in a manga. He looked at the hand print he saw on the tree, and suddenly Taiyou became very excited/thrilled.

He loved raising levels in games, that's why when Hera appeared in front of him he was able to obtain the feeling of being able to play games in real life. However, if levelling up in real life literally/actually increase his real life abilities then it was a whole new ballpark that he had to consider.

Level 4, Strength was at 30. And with this amount of strength, I was able to activate the amount of power I displayed just moments ago.

Just thinking about this fact made him exhilarated and he wanted to get up and do something.

If it was like this, he wanted to without delay and as fast as possible increase his level…….. With these kind of thoughts, he turned his face towards Hera and wanted to ask her of the methods required in order to increase to the next level, however at that moment.

「Taiyou-san」

There was someone calling out his name. When he changed his point of view to the direction the voice came from, only one of the three twin sisters stood there, she was the shortest of the bunch (Kazane) and she was standing in the

entrance of the park.

Maybe it was because of the moonlight or perhaps it was some other kind of thing. But, her cheeks were blushing as she approached Taiyou whilst looking into his eyes.

「Oh it's you? 」

「Won't you call me by my name? 」

「…….Kazane」

When her name was called out just like she wished it to be, her face reddened even further.

「Why have you come here? 」

「That was exactly my question to you. Before homeroom class even finished you dashed out of the class room, were you ok? I was so worried and I tried searching everywhere for you」

「Yeah, I had some small matters to attend to you see」

「By small matters…..you mean that? 」

Kazane moved her face as if she was trying to peek and see what was behind Taiyou, She was looking at the wooden bench which he was sitting on just moments ago. Below the bench the things Taiyou crushed and ripped were littered all over the floor and rolling down like a bunch of wreckage. It was the kind of thing that if you didn't know the internal state of affairs, any normal person would be greatly bewildered and or perplexed when seeing such a spectacle.

Of course, Kazane was not an exception.

「Were you releasing your frustrations and trying to reduce stress? 」

「Hm? ahh I guess it's something like that」

Taiyou nods his head in assent. Kazane couldn't see Hera and she also didn't know Taiyou was capable of levelling up, furthermore he thought that it was better for her to remain oblivious to such facts.

「Is that really so?…..Hey, Taiyou-san」

「Eh? 」

「If you have some pent up frustrations to release…… I'm, okay with it」

「……..What are you okay/fine with? 」

「I will be able to……..endure it」

「no, no, no, no, you don't have to do anything, it's not that kind of pent up frustrations/desires」

「If it's not about that, then, thenn……」

「Hmm? 」

「A Mans——」

「No it's not that kind of thing either, I'm telling you! I'm just a normal guy that is only interested girls」

A vehement and disastrous misunderstanding was about to occur, so he reflexively used a large voice and desperately tried to explain/justify his point of view.

「Is that so? I'm relieved….」

「As long as you understand than it's good, I'm so relieved that you didn't misunderstand my intentions… you know? 」

Surely he wasn't going to really be thought as a homo right? Taiyou thinking about this matter had an astonished look.

「But I'm really glad…… If you really said that you liked other men…….I, wouldn't know what I should do」

「Kazane…….」

Kazane was truly feeling down, and when he saw that part of her, Taiyou's heart skipped a beat.

Although she looked like a little red riding hood from primary school, but the maturity of her personality/mind was that of a respectable 1st year high school classmate. To sum it up she was a person who held favour towards Taiyou, and was one of the girls that professed her love towards him.

Looking at her graceful figure he was irresistibly drawn to it and, Taiyou spread his arms and embraced it around her petite body.

「Hau…….」

Kazane who was tightly wrapped around Taiyou, let out loose leaks of hot/passionate breaths from her mouth, into Taiyou's chest and it tickled his heart.

「Taiyou-san……I like you. I really like you」

「Oh-Uwa! 」

As he was about to say "Me too" Taiyou suddenly let out a surprised yell which totally ruined the mood.

「Eh? 」

Kazane looked up from within his arms and raised a dubious/confused voice. Taiyou tried to smooth it over and quickly told her that nothing was wrong in a panic.

The reason he suddenly raised his voice was not because of Kazane, but because Hera suddenly appeared before him.

She was keeping her promise of staying silent so Hera just floated in the air right in front of Taiyou, whilst looking at the two of them, Hera's eyes were sparkling with stars, like a fan that was passionately watching a concert that was the kind of gaze she had.

It was the kind of look filled with expectation and an inquisitive mind.

——What is she doing? Hey, right now what is she doing?!

Feeling her intense gaze, Taiyou gave off the feeling of someone who stretched out their ears and misheard something.

What she was doing……Even Taiyou could not discern such matters.

Just a couple of days ago he was feeling frustrated and regretful that he could not experience this side of life. However he did not expect in the slightest that he would actually be able to experience such a thing, and worse yet, he didn't have a single idea or know what to do from here now that he actually reached such a

stage.

And just when he was getting hesitant at what to do next, Hera went into the skies and flew next to the bench where the vinyl bag was and picked it up, then she pointed at Kazane's clothes and began to replicate her behaviour on the bag as she ripped/teared it up.

「That's clearly rape!」

He reflexively made a retort to the actions Hera was trying to endorse him to do and he gave Hera a slap. With a strength of 30, Hera who was hit by Taiyou was like a baseball and flew into far into the skies as if he hit a home run.

「Taiyou-san?」

「Eh? ahh don't worry its nothing」

Taiyou was trying to reassure/fool Kazane into thinking that nothing was happening. After a while of just being in the moment and staying silent, Kazane falteringly started to open her mouth to speak.

「The thing is….I, the truth is」

「Hmm?」

「I like to be treated in a rough manner」

「I didn't just hear that did I?!」

「And also, Kotone and Suzune are also the same as me……because we are, identical triplets」

「Even if that may be so, I will pretend I didn't hear this?!」

「That's why, its fine…….」

「That isn't fine, I don't have that kind of hobbies」

「You don't?」

「I don't, I like to firmly hold and be gentle with the girls I like」

「Be gentle?」

「Yeah!」

「Firmly hold?」

「That's right!」

「……. Just like what we are doing right now?」

「uuuu……..」

When asked such a question, Taiyou began to feel shy/bashful and he couldn't answer her.

"I like you, I really like you". Receiving such a pure and straight feelings of favourability from the three sisters, Taiyou at one stage or other also began to like the three sisters.

Although he did indeed like them, getting the words "I like you" out of his mouth was really embarrassing/awkward that he could not get it out of his mouth. Therefore, instead of talking, he embraced her small body firmly and closely. As of this point in time, that was the utmost Taiyou could do.

Holding each other and looking into each other's eyes. The air around them became ticklish/lovey dovey. Before long their faces seem to congregate and get closer with each other—-.

「Kotone-chan? Suzune-chan!?」

Suddenly, the sweet atmosphere popped like a balloon.

Somehow or other, after calling out the names of her two sisters, Kazane's face became pale as a ghost.

Chapter 8: Thirty Students

Chapter 10: Twelve Islands

Chapter 10

Chapter 9: Let's Go With Muscle

Chapter 11: Eternally Little

The sweet atmosphere which existed between the two several seconds ago, was blown away without a single trace or vestige.

「Kazane? 」

A puzzled Taiyou.

The petite girl known as Kazane whom was still being wrapped around his arms had a surprised look on her face, and he could see, it was like she was frightened by something.

「What’s wrong, did something happen? 」

「Koto-chan and Suzu-chan are feeling scared」

「They are scared? How come—-」

Kazane interrupted what Taiyou’s was about to speak with a look that said, “You understand don’t you?”

The memory of the event in in which he asked Kotone various questions, resurfaced within his mind. Amongst the three girls, the thing known as telepathy exists between them, and even if they were apart they were able to

clearly sense and convey each other's emotions/feelings.

When he was asking them about their psychic connection, he didn't really fully believe in it, but now that he was seeing in action, he completely believes in their telepathy.

This is because, the blue pale face Kazane had on her face, told the whole story. If she was acting this out, she would receive an Academy Award.

「Where are they? 」

「Eh? 」

「Where are they located? Are you able to discern such info? 」

「Ye, yeah…….Only the direction they are in though」

Although she was a little puzzled by Taiyou's question, she began to look at the general direction her sisters were in. without asking another question and looking slightly worried/concerned, she was trying to show him the direction her two elder sisters were located in.

「Alright, let's go」

「Ye, Yeah! 」

The two people headed off. They went out of the park, and they stuck to the residential area whilst running.

Kazane appeared to be running at her full speed however, it would seem that she was about to be left in the dust by Taiyou's speed at any moment now.

Although there was obviously some differences between a man and woman's constitution, in this case there was just too big of a gap between them. She was only 130 centimetres, standing at the height of a primary school kid and the distance every step she took could not be compared to Taiyou's long strides.

Taiyou halts his running, and for the time being he let her catch up to him—-.

「Taiyou—-Hyaa! 」

When she reached close to him, he suddenly grabbed her hands and picked her off her bottom and held on to her in his arms.

It was the so-called (AKA) princess-carry, he was embracing her in this posture

as he continued to sprint.

「Ta ta ta Taiyou-san? 」

「If we do it this way it will be much faster, Please bear with it」

「O, Ok」

「Which way! 」

「Ta, Take the right…….Then a left」

「I understand! 」

With Kazane's navigation I was able to dash and weave through the dark residential area.

Whilst he was doing this he started to think that the situation was getting worse and worse by the minute. If you ask why, it is because Kazane whom is in his arms, her face became more and more pale and her body started to tremble/shiver repeatedly.

The triplet sisters convey their pure feelings mutually between each other with telepathy. When he saw Kazane shivering in fear to this extent, he thought that the two sisters must be in deep trouble.

Influenced by her condition, Taiyou was feeling really anxious.

「Do you know what's happening to them? 」

「I don't know, back when we were kids, we could have done it though」

「In that case, is there something that comes to mind? Anything that may help? 」

「That is… Perhaps it's……」

Even now Kazane had a face which seemed to be able to cry at any moment.

「I think it's…….my father」

That's what she just said.

「Your father? 」

Taiyou had troubled eyebrows. (Note: he puckers his eye brows) Why would they be so afraid of their own father? Is what he was thinking right now.

Don't tell me it's DV? For one second this thought came into his mind. (Note: DV is = domestic violence)

「Over there, a right」

「There they are! 」

As she said it, when we took a right turn, we could see the figures of the two girls.

Kotone and Suzune, Both of these girls, similar to how Kazane was, were so pale that he could see it from a long distance away.

And then he also found the main reason as to why Kazane and the girls were feeling so scared.

What he saw was, a middle aged man and a woman wearing a suit saying something to the two sisters, whilst slowly cornering them into the wall.

「Kotone! Suzune! 」

「「Taiyou-san!!」」

Their voice was harmonious. (They spoke at same time) The moment they saw Taiyou, it was like the two of them saw their saviour, and their facial expressions were filled with relief.

Just like that Taiyou quickly rushed over to them, and he moved in between the man and woman trying to bother the two sisters.

「Sorry I'm late, are you girls alright? 」

He was trying to defend the two sisters, almost as if he was trying to use his wide back to cover them up from the other party.

「Yeah, we are fine」

「In that case, that's good」

For the time being, he made it in time and he felt relieved. Thereupon, he switched his focus back on the man and woman.

Looking at the man, he seemed to be around his mid-forties. He had a relaxed face, an unshaven beard and crumpled up clothing, it was the kind of getup that implied he was not a prim and proper adult.

On the other hand the woman seemed to give the complete opposite atmosphere/ambience/aura. She was wrapped around by a tight skirt suit, breasts that were about to explode/spill out of her top. Contrasted with a slim figure that was thin as a sharp blade and has been properly honed and exercised, that was the kind of atmosphere she gave.

The middle aged man seemed harmless to him, but Taiyou wanted to keep vigilant and not let his guard down around the woman.

To him that was being vigilant, Kotone called out from the back.

「Excuse me, Taiyou-san」

「What is it? 」

「It may not be appropriate at this time, but i have a favour to ask of you……」

She was hesitantly speaking. What could it be? Taiyou puckered up his eyebrows.

When he did, instead of Kotone speaking, it was Suzune which suddenly blurted it out.

「Please hold us in a princess style carry as well! 」

「Do you guys know something called TPO!?」 (Note: TPO is a Japanese acronym which stands for Time, Place and Occasion. It is sometimes used to draw attention to an experience that was inappropriate or worthy of note.)

Without thinking Taiyou's voice broke into a falsetto as he blurted out his response.

「Now is not the time for those kinds of things, more importantly just moments ago you guys were shaking in fear, what was happening?」

「That's because, it's not fair that only Kaza-chan was able to get all the attention〜」

「That's right, we also want to be held in a princess carry」

「Koto-chan, Suzu-chan……..It feels really good」

Kazane said this whilst her face began to slightly blush.

「What do you guys mean? 」

「uuuu, We– A-r-e Jealous–」 (note: We are jealous is what they are saying)

「It's time to put Kaza-chan down, and take turns with us」

「No, I don't want to switch places〜 it's my long awaited chance to get held by Taiyou-san. If you guys are jealous, isn't it fine if both Koto-chan and Suzu-chan just got carried as well? 」 (note: Kazane is using the words もらったんだもん, as she ends her sentence, which is almost like a pouting action)

「That's also true」

「Yeah, Lets go with that」

「No wait, guys isn't that physically impossible to do?!」

The two sisters surrounded Taiyou, and as if they thought it was a good idea, the two girls Kotone and Suzune extended their hands and held unto Taiyou's neck and stuck to him in that posture.

Whilst holding Kazane with both his hands, although it was barely, he was able to support the three sisters holding on to him. Although he was surprised by that fact, he soon realised that it was all thanks to him possessing 30 strength.

The ridiculous scene of the three girls hanging from his body, if the situation allowed for it, he would of let out one or two sighs.

「You're quite amazing aren't you, I didn't know such a man existed whom was able to simultaneously embrace three girls in the hold of his arms at the same

time, what an outstanding male specimen you are」

The woman who was just silently watching until now, had opened her mouth to address Taiyou, she used a tone of voice that seemed to hold both admiration and scorn at the same time and he could not tell if she was just being sarcastic or not as her expression was unreadable.

「Do you really see this as me holding all three girls at once? No matter what angle you see this from, isn't it more like they are just hanging/dangling from me? 」

「You are supporting all three of their weights, that fact is undisputable」

「Rather than supporting their weight……it's more like I've become a Konaki Jijii」(Note: Konaki Jijii is a ghost in Japanese folklore it has the shape of a small old man with the voice of a baby's cry/shriek)

After releasing a sigh, as if trying to banter/argue with the woman he challenged the woman's reasoning.

「More importantly, who are you guys? 」

「You took the words right of my mouth 」

The middle aged man interrupted the woman and began to talk. Although they were standing three metres apart, he could smell the foul breath coming from the man and it was extremely unpleasant.

「You brat, what is your relationship with my daughters, hmmm??」

「Daughter? Don't tell me, you are their father? 」

「Thaz right, so, who are you, you brat? 」

「……I'm the classmate Natsuno Taiyou」

In the mean time I gave my greetings to the father of the Hayakawa sisters…….. and turned my gaze at the woman.

Who are you? That was the kind of gaze Taiyou gave to the woman.

「I am known as Juunishima Sakura, I am Pleased to make your acquaintance」 (she says this with very formal language)

「Juunishima?] (Twelve Islands?) (note: today's title has island repeated twelve

times, I'm guessing the author is referring to her, But I didn't want to spam you guys with me typing island 12 times so I will leave it like that) (**Illustration: Sakura Measuring Taiyou's Worth**)

Taiyou has never heard such a unique name as Junishima and thus he was a little bewildered.

「It's a local name, It's a family name that only people who lived in my native island would have」

「In other words, the dwelling of the island people, it has that kind of meaning? 」(Note: Juu = じゅう= 住 = dwelling, in this context, it is not the number that's being referred to.)

「Yes, although in my case, I believe the Kanji I used for my surname does not represent the Kanji for this character」(she's basically saying she's not using the kanji for the number 12 十二 and instead she's using 双六島)

Well what do you think of my name? That's the kind of face Sakura had.

「Well after all if it is used in that manner of speaking, you can't really just attach numbers to your name」

「Yes, but it would seem that I don't have the general common sense that Japanese people have. I must admit it's because I was raised/brought up in such a unique culture」

「And, you were not taught common sense? 」

「Only the necessary ones」

「What you mean by Twelve Islands, could it be arranged like『島島島島島島島島島島島じゅうにしま』is that how you wish to be called? 」

「That's a brilliant/wonderful way to pronounce it, let's assume that I changed it to that and I would like to be referred to as such from now on」

「……Well, Whatever you wish」

She completely lacks any logic, that's what Taiyou thought.

「Oi, by the way」

Hayakawa's father cut in the conversation and had an expression of

displeasure on his face.

When I turned my line of vision to him, I felt as if I was staring at some sort of hoodlum/yakuza, and he was glaring at me with a scowl on his face.

「What is it? 」

「You brat, How long are you goin ta keep standing there and keep my daughters dangling like that?」

「…..Ah」

When it was pointed out, Taiyou finally recalled that he was talking to the two people, whilst he had the three sisters dangling on his body.

Memo written about the progress at the Tenth Chapter

【Level】4

【Main Abilities】

Strength: 30

Charm: 65535

Popularity: 0

【His Valuable Possessions】

A broken smart phone

One room apartment

An annoying fairy

【Brides】

Currently: None

【Acquaintances】

Hayakawa: Kotone, Suzune and Kazane

Juunishima Sakura

Chapter 9: Let's Go With Muscle

Chapter 11: Eternally Little

Chapter 11

Chapter 10: Twelve Islands

Chapter 12: Dodging the Question

Taiyou released a sigh, and the previous tension he had seemed to melt away.

「Guys, for the time being won't you get off me?」

「Ehhh」

「Just a little bit more」

「It's not something that happens often」

Kazane was the only one that was unique, as she was the only one actually being held by him in a princess carry style.

Although their actions were cute, Taiyou couldn't really see what was so special about hanging on his body, and he gradually let out an increasing number of sighs.

「Guys, it will be fine……..It's just for the time being, alright?」

When Taiyou spoke more resolutely, the girls became obedient and they slowly seperated from him. They moved behind the scenes and was hiding behind Taiyou in silence.

That’s because they realised that since they got together, they have been playing around too much. However, even though they were playing around when Taiyou arrived, it was also true that they were slightly shaking.

The season was still early in the summer, and it was definitely not because of the cold that their bodies were shaking, anyone could tell you that.

When Taiyou came rushing over to the girls, he could tell that from their facial expressions that they were really frightened from the depths of their heart and it was not just about playing a prank on him. Because of this fact, Since Taiyou arrived he has been unable to feel relieved.

Taiyou remembered how frustrated he felt he was before he arrived.

And he hated the fact that he could not come here sooner to help the girls.

And with that, he shifted his anger.

He turned towards the two people that made the three sisters shake in fear.

「What’s with that look on your face, you brat who are you really?」

The father of the girls had an unpleasant facial expression and challenged/questioned Taiyou.

「I’m the classmate Natsuno Taiyou. I believe I introduced myself just moments ago?」

「That’s not what I’m asking you, what is your relationship with my daughters, that’s what I’m asking you」

「What kind of relation……..」

For now he stopped his words mid way, and made a glance over his shoulder looking back at the three sisters.

When his eyes met with the three sisters, their cheeks blushed red. A picture that was worth more than a thousand words was painted, just from the reactions the girl, and without the need for anymore words, their relationship with him became obvious.

When seeing such a reaction from his girl's, the father instantly boiled in anger.

「You scum!」

「Hayakawa-san, Please settle down for a moment」

「Huhhh? You're telling me to calm down after seeing this?!」

「Yes, please behave yourself」

Sakura repeated such words in a flat tone of voice.

Feeling the pressure coming out from Sakura, Taiyou's back was slightly trembling, Even more so to the person whom received the direct scolding, the father let out a meek voice "uuu" and he backed off silently.

After seeing this, Sakura smiled and turned towards Taiyou.

「Please let me ask you a single question. Natsuno-san by coming here are you planning on become a hindrance to us?」

「That will, depend on what your objectives are?」

Taiyou responded and probed her for an explanation.

Whilst watching Taiyou in silence, without a single change in her expression she began to talk again.

「You want to know our objectives? As a premise to the explanation, is Natsuno-san aware of the group of people named "Eternally Little"?

「Eternal Light? are you talking about some sort of fantasy game?」

「No, they are people which exist in the real world」

Although she said they existed in the real world, Taiyou could only tilt his neck

as he could not remember ever having heard of such a group before.

Suddenly, he could feel that the people behind him were nervous. It was the reaction from the three sisters. It seemed that the girls knew of such a group existing and reacted to the words “Eternally Little”.

Sakura also realised the girl’s reaction but she only let out an indifferent smile as she proceeded on with her talk.

「In regards to the limits of the female gender, there are females in this world that grow normally up to the age of ten, but then, after they go past the age of ten, their bodies wont grow past adulthood and they will remain eternally young without being able to age, I am talking about these group of people」

「Their growth, and even their ageing stops…….?」

「Yes, Both of those things stop. That process will continue until they die. And when this kind of things happen, you understand the consequences right?」

「…… Will they become a Loli-Baba? 」

Taiyou used the vocabulary he understood to process the information.

「Yes, That is another way of saying it. The more generalised name they are known by is “beautiful witches”. However that name is only for the general public who think that these girls just dress in order to look young without knowing the real reason behind it…..As I have just explained to you, the girls whom stop growing after the age of ten and stay eternally young……These girls are what is known as the “Eternally Little”.

「So such people actually exist?」

「Yes. another unconventional name they are known by is the “Old Maidens” however because it is rarely mentioned, it is possible to just forget about this term」

「So what’s the deal with these so called “Eternally Little” people anyways?」

「These girls at one stage used to lived in an uninhabited area……This is because they would be persecuted as witches, their outward appearance was perpetually at the age of ten, and it wasn’t strange that they were forced to live in secluded areas」

「…….Well, if it was an age where the superstition was regarded highly, that would be the case I suppose」

「Yes, That is exactly right. In this modern age, medical science has proceeded enough to able to clarify the cause of the girls being unable to age, and they hypothesized that it was due to a genetic mutation」

「In other words, its a disease?」

「Its a disease that makes you unable to age」

She stopped talking momentarily and grinned so that only one side of her mouth was raised.

「And, this is the important part. Being unable to age……In other words, being able to be perpetually young and beautiful has become an extremely desirable thing for women all around the globe」

「Well that is probably true」

「In the olden days people would fear the strange appearance of the girls, however now that the cause of it has been identified with modern science, people are instead trying to unlock the answer to achieving perpetual youth, a research team has been created just for this purpose. Furthermore——」

Sakura shifted her gaze to the girls who were standing behind Taiyou.

「The girls behind you, are perhaps the key to making a huge breakthrough in this branch of research」

「What do you mean?」

「You don't understand? Even though they are identical triplets that came from the same chromosome……And although they possess the same genes——」

「——For some unknown reason, their height is considerably different from each other」

Taiyou finishes Sakura's sentence. He finally understood, what Sakura was trying to convey to him.

Sakura looks at Taiyou like he was a student whom was able to answer correctly when asked a question.

「That's how it is」

「In other words, you want to use their bodies as a science experiment」

「What a bad way to put it, It's more like we are trying to help achieve the dreams of the general public and are collaborating for that purpose」

「No matter how you try to gloss things over, the meaning stays the same」

「That's such a negative attitude」

「Of course」

「Taiyou-san…..」

He could hear one of the girls speaking from behind. He didn't know who it was that spoke, but the feelings they tried to convey got through to him.

「Did you think that I would let things stand…….If your intentions were to play around with the girl's bodies and use them for your own gains?」

「Don't you understand the situation? These girl's have the unlimited potential of the human race within them. although it may not be as much as eternal life…… however it is still incredibly useful for those women who wish to keep their youthful looks」

「That's a shame but, Since I am a guy I don't have those kinds of thoughts, and neither am I interested in such things」

「Then let me rephrase it. Allowed me to clarify the mechanics of how this can be applied, for a women, they will be able to retain their youth and beauty for a very long time. And for the men, being able to see their lovers perpetually young is an advantage in itself and cannot really be disregarded as irrelevant」
(**Illustration: Eternally Young Girls**)

「I understand, It is an amazing thing」

「Isn't it?」

the girls behind him all held their breath.

「However, no matter how good it sounds, the methods used to obtain such a result still requires you to experiment on them, is this correct?」

「……Yes, that is true」

“And so what if we have to experiment on them” that’s the kind of facial expression Sakura had.

「For me, more so than the conversation we just had, I have a problem that is right in front of my eyes right now」

「And, what problem could it be?」

「Trying to kidnap women and take them away against their will, and as a man watching this, this has become my problem」

「This has become pointless hasn’t it」

「Well, that’s how this is」

「Although you display a very gentlemanly, dignified and beautiful scene, In most cases, these kind of people may not come out obtaining benefits. On the contrary, most of these types of men actually become harmed/injured instead」

「In that time, as a man, I will be able to endure the hardships」

「Did you learn such principle’s from your parents?」

「If I had to say it was from something, It was from the game I used to play」

Sakura’s face stiffened when she heard the jesting statement Taiyou made.

Although it was the cold hard truth, for the other party, they felt as if he was just joking around.

「Is that so?」

Sakura had a slight smile on her face, however it was a different kind of smile from the one displayed previously.

It was an expression which signified, a failure in the negotiations.

「You fools, what have you been talking about since a while ago?」

Suddenly, the father of the girls butted in the conversation.

「I am the father of those girls. And all I am doing is taking my daughters back home」

「You……..Did you sell your daughters?」

「Huhhhh?」

The father glared at him. Taiyou recognised how despicable the father was, and he gave him a look of pure digust.

「You brat! What's with those disrespectful eyes!」

Whilst shouting, the father threw a fist right at Taiyou.

Taiyou who had crossed over the boundaries of just being merely angry had instead become calm, he catches the fist thrown at him by the father, he put a bit of strength in his grip and squeezed.

「It, it hurts!!!」

The father gave a shriek/scream.

That fist, was about to follow the same fate as the apple in which he bought from the super market.

Chapter 10: Twelve Islands

Chapter 12: Dodging the Question

Chapter 12

Chapter 11: Eternally Little

Chapter 13: Code name: Shirokiyami

「Let me go!」

The father had greasy sweat dribbling down his forehead as he tried to shake his hands from Taiyou's grip.

Taiyou had a chilling glare directed towards the father. He wanted to crush the fathers hand just like he did with the apple, but the father managed to slip away before he got a chance.

「You insolent brat……..What is your intentions ?」

The father's voice was trembling, his fist turned so white it looked painful and even his whole body was shaking.

On the other hand, Taiyou was extremely calm and composed.

「In retrospect, I should have crushed your fist the instant you attacked me」

「Wha…..」

The father became speechless. Seeing this scene, Sakura gracefully begins to talk.

「I see, you aren't all about "talking big"」(She's saying he can actually walk the talk)

「Sorry, I'm just a high school student so I don't understand that particular expression you just used」("talking big" is the unconventional expression she used)

「Did you know? I, favour a man like you, instead of boiling up in anger when he's under pressure, he can instantly cool down his mind, I think that this kind of disposition is really desirable」

「Instead of "dodging the question", and answering with another question why don't we start communicating more effectively?」

「I believe my conversational skills are logical enough. Well enough about that. More importantly, I will take your actions to mean that you are the ally of the girl's, will this be the correct assumption?」

「What is certain, is that I am not an ally of justice」

「Even more than me, aren't you the one having fun, by trying to "dodge" the conversation/question?」

Sakura covers her mouth, as she lets out a slight laughter.

「However, I understand. It seems there is no other way, even though I wanted to resolve this in a peaceful manner」

After saying that, she raised her hands into the air and clicked her fingers together.

「—-Tsu!」(surprised)

In that moment, the blood in Taiyou's whole body froze as if he was in some sort of hallucination. A shiver ran up his spine and without thinking he took a step back in retreat.

He soon realised why he was shivering. In compliance with Sakura's summoning, groups of men wearing black clothing started to appear in succession as if out of thin air.

That is, twenty men dressed in black appeared from the yonder and surrounded Taiyou from three different directions.

Seeing such a Taiyou, Sakura turned towards the father and gave a look of confirmation.

「It's about to get a little rough, this should not be a problem for you right?」

「The things that was promised to me, they will be delivered on time right?」

「It most certainly will, that's because your honourable-daughters have the hopes and dreams of all the women in the world on the line. Taking that into consideration, a price that corresponds with its high value will surely be rewarded to you」

「Hehehehehehe」

After hearing Sakura's words, the father of the girls had a satisfied smile and laughed in a vulgar manner.

The conversation between the two was about such a vulgar/disgusting topic that Taiyou suspected Sakura's ulterior motives for letting him hear it.

「I can't believe that there really is a father that would sell their own daughter…..」

「Huhhh, you brat——」

Hayakawa's father whom was about to curse at Taiyou, was stopped by Sakura when she signalled him to stop with her hand.

「The act of selling's one daughter you can just think of it as a disreputable part time job that one takes in desperate times」

「…….」

Taiyou was silent, for the first time in his life, a horrible feeling that he could not imagine began to rise in his heart.

His anger was like magma, he felt it bubbling and boiling from within the depths of his heart———However, the violent emotion was not reflected in his face at all, that was the kind of young man Natsuno Taiyou was.

On the contrary, his mind began to cool down rapidly. In an instant his heart went cold and calculative, it was as if his fury took him below the freezing point and he reached the pinnacle of absolute zero.

He looked around the vicinity.

Behind him was a concrete wall, and in front was the blacked clothed men surrounding him from three directions. It was a situation where he and the three sisters were completely enclosed with no way to escape.

In order to break out of this situation——he began to think for a little, and without turning his head around he started to talk to the three sisters.

「I will open a path, When the opportunity arises, please use that chance to escape」

「What about you Taiyou-san? 」

He heard them speaking, but he could not really pin point which of the three sisters was speaking. Because there was no room for him to make a mistake by turning his head around.

「Don't worry about me, I will make it out somehow」

「But—-」

「Please just go」

Taiyou calmly rebutted whatever they were going to say without giving them a chance to continue.

「The most I can do for you guys is to create a path of retreat. With this many enemies surrounding us, it will be too difficult to protect you guys at the same time. You understand don't you? 」

「I understand. Suzu-chan and Kaza-chan you guys are fine with this as well right? 」

「Yeah! 」

「We'll run to the best of our abilities」

「Alright, that's good then…….」

Taiyou nods his head and refocusses his full attention on the black clothed men.

During the time period in which Taiyou was communicating with the girls, Sakura gave multiple instructions out and the men in black clothing started to

converge and take position to engage. Even if he could create a diversion to open a gap in between them, the hole would soon close up again.

The plan Taiyou discussed with the girls was seemingly the correct course of action to take, however…

「Let's go! UOOOO!」

Taiyou let out a war cry—-and turned his face to look behind him. And he went straight towards the concrete wall and started to hit it!

DOKA! GARAGARAGARA. (*punch* *crumble* rocks falling)

The concrete wall crumbled to dust and a cloud of sand raised from the ground.

「A, amazing…..as expected of Taiyou-san」

「Is this the time to be impressed?! Quickly get away」

He was speaking loudly and trying to urge them to escape. When he did the three sisters were shocked to action and began to make their way towards the other side of the hole. The three sisters were unwilling to part with Taiyou and they looked at him one last time before making their escape together.

They were taking advantage of the fact that Sakura was taken aback with amazement and using it as an opportunity to escape through the hole, Taiyou had the aura of a mighty warrior and was standing in a daunting pose.

Sakura whom was late to react had a bitter smile on her face.

「I didn't expect that you would be able to open a hole in that concrete wall」

「Did you think I would go towards the black clothed men? If that's the case then it's regrettable. To be completely caught off guard, how does it feel? 」

「You need to say that kind of dialog more sinisterly, otherwise it won't be effective」

「If a person is good natured, my way of talking is also acceptable」

「Ara (oh), But it seems that you have a wicked heart」

Sakura was standing on guard, ufufufu, and on the contrary, she began to laugh as if she was enjoying the challenge.

「Oi, what are you just standing there, quickly chase after them」

Hayakawa's father was shouting at the men in black and tried to get them to move. They were unable to comprehend the event that occurred because it was beyond their expectations, so instead of taking action they seemed to have looked towards Sakura and waited for the next set of instructions.

「It would appear that instead of taking a detour, it would be faster to just push onwards. There is no other choice, please subdue that child」

「Yes! 」

One of the men clothed in black responded to the order, and he extended a hand which looked tough and muscular towards Taiyou.

Taiyou casually grasps the man's hand, and returned a punch of his own.

The man in black tried to guard against it, however——.

「Gu…….Haa…..」

Taiyou easily broke past the man's guard, and his fist landed straight in the belly of the man. In an instant, the man's body was raised from the ground, and his body blown backwards and flew like the way you would write the 〈 Japanese character.

「…….You, are you for real? 」

The complexion of Sakura's face changed. It was an expression that was filled with astonishment looking at how powerful Taiyou was.

「I'm just an average kid, that is crazy about games」

「Is that so? 」

Sakura erased her surprised expression and jerked her chin, when she did the men in black all moved at once and went towards Taiyou.

Taiyou took a step back and went inside the hole in the wall. He went from a position in which he could be attacked from three directions to where it was only possible to attack him from the front.

It was the kind of knowledge he applied from the SRPG he used to play back when he was leveling up in his games. (Strategical Role Playing Games)

Taiyou began to punch the incoming black men and knock them away one at a time.

It was an overwhelming amount of power, all he needed was one punch in order to defeat his opponents.

After all, that strength was a power which exceeded common sense……..It was a power he obtained from leveling up and reaching 30 strength. However, his other stats were mediocre and because of this, Taiyou were unable to dodge or deflect the attacks coming from the men in black and he actually received plenty of strikes from his opponents as well.

The men in black came at him one after another, and he received numerous blows to his body, and the damage was piling up.

Even so, Taiyou's punches did not seem to get any weaker in strength. He was continuously defeating the black clothed men in one punch.

「What kind of M, Monster are you? 」(Hayakawa's father)

「……tsu」

He wiped the corners of his mouth where fresh blood was seeping out with the back of his hand. He completely ignored Hayakawa's father who was frightened by him, and looked towards Sakura whom had a sour face right now. Hayakawa's father was only a small issue, the main problem was all caused by Sakura.

「These bunch of good-for-nothing, fellows」(Taiyou speaking)

Taiyou was grinning and laughing, because the result seemed to be apparent, his next move was to make a bluff.

「…….These guys and I have worked together for a very long time, I know best the extent of their true abilities. They are definitely not one to get beaten by high school student」

Sakura gave Taiyou a piercing gaze.

「You, who are you really? 」

「Like I said……I'm just your regular high school kid that is crazy about his games」

「Since you are not willing to answer, does this mean that if I want to find out, I'll have to use brute strength to pry it out of you? 」(Sakura speaking)

「Who knows, we shall see」

Taiyou responds in a light hearted manner.

Suddenly, an uncomfortable feeling welled in him.

At first he didn't know what gave him that uncomfortable feeling, so he started to look around to find out what it was.

However when he realised what it was, his heart grew even more worried, and it was like a large bell was being wrung loudly in his head.

——ZOKU! (*tremble*)

The hot sweat which came out as he was battling, turned to cold sweat in an instant. The scary chill which ran up his spine returned again.

It was the instant, in which Sakura raised up her hand, in which he felt this feeling. However, he was mistaken when he thought that what would appear would be another bunch of men in black.

Taiyou instinctively made a step back.

An extreme explosion of killing intent was released, and without thinking, Taiyou was reacting with his instincts.

Chapter 11: Eternally Little

Chapter 13: Code name: Shirokiyami

Chapter 13

Chapter 12: Dodging the Question

Chapter 14: Thick and Thin

The inside of my brain was painted in white.

My thoughts were suspended, the scene in front of me was so unrealistic that I felt like it wasn't real, It was almost as if I was seeing the world from a computer screen and spectating some kind of FPS game.

In the residential area where the sun was beginning to set and evening was about to arrive, Taiyou stood in an upright fashion.

In the space that seemed to exude darkness——a white girl appeared.

The girl had a slender build and she was holding an unbalanced sword in her hand.

An attack!

Even if he realised what was happening inside his brain, Taiyou continued to stand still without moving a muscle.

The swaying street light reflected a dark grey light.

The dazzling sword……..approaches before his eye's!

「Taiyou-chan!」

「—-tsu!」

Taiyou whom barely reacted to his name being called, fiercely kicked the earth beneath his feet and flew backwards. Because it was so unpredictable, he landed in a unsightly/clumsy way falling unto his back, however, thanks to his timely response he was able to avoid the balde which blurred and sliced the wind creating a howling sound.

「Taiyou-chan are you ok!?」

With half his brain still paralyzed from the amount of killing intent that poured towards him, he looked in the direction that the voice came from. Before he was aware of it, what appeared in front of him was the worried expression of his level up fairy, Hera.

Gradually, his thoughts began to settle and he regained some control over his body.

「……..I'm safe, there's no problem」

「I'm so glad〜…..」

He patted the head of Hera who seemed like she could cry at any moment, and he slowly pushed himself up from the ground.

「What a strange, person」

The girl mutters. Taiyou rebuilt his stance, and looked at the girl who launched the slashing attack at him.

what stood before him was an unbalanced girl.

a distinctive feature of hers, was her long white hair which reached the back of her knees and was fluttering in the wind. possessing a skin that was similar in colour to her hair (albino skin), and red boundless eyes which seemed to be looking at everything and nothing at the same time.

In contrast to all of this, she was wearing a black gothic Lolita dress, which portrayed a witch like image.

on top of her white(fair) look she covered it with black clothing.

That was not the end of her imbalanced look, She appeared to be around 140 centimetres tall but she was holding a normal Japanese katana that had a wooden handle.

She was still standing in her battle Iai pose, whilst she looked at Taiyou in a mysterious way. (Iai battle stance = Kenshin move, the one where he draws his sword and uses that momentum to make an attack and immediately sheaths it again.)

「You….who are you?」

Taiyou questions/challenges her. Maybe because his brain wasn't working properly yet, rather than asking why she attacked him, Taiyou was more interested in who she was.

「My name is not worth mentioning」

After the girl declared such a thing, she tilted her head as if she suddenly remembered something.

「Actually I misspoke…….You are not worthy to know my name」(**Illustration: Shirokiyami Wielding a Katana**)

「Hey, was there a point to stating it like that?」

「Yes. It's the manners I learnt from someone I know. they also told me that I should wear a mask whilst saying such things」

「I don't really know whom you learnt such things from, but they don't seem like decent/good people to me!」

Taiyou intensely declared.

「Most likely, you are also not a decent/good person」

「Why's that?」

「The way you were speaking to yourself just know was weird」

「uuuu」

What she was trying to say was, he had been talking to himself all this while at the energetic thing that kept flying around his vicinity with a twinkle in her eyes.

In other words, although it seemed as though he was talking to himself, he was in fact talking with Hera.

To Taiyou all he did was thank Hera whom saved him from a pinch by giving her a nice pat on the head.

However nobody other than him could see Hera's existence/appearance, that's the reason it seemed like he was talking to himself in a soliloquy, even if he was called strange/weird for it, there was nothing he could say in rebuttal.

「Taiyou-chan～……」

Hera also understood this fact and she showed him an apologetic look.

Taiyou was smiling and had an expression that said "its not your fault" . He turned to face the girl and Sakura, and rebuilt his expression to a more serious one and began to speak.

「That was quite an ambush」

「It was not my intention to hide anything from you, you know? She was right there from the start」

「Since the beginning?」

「Yeah, since the beginning. she was standing amongst them」

「Aren't you lying? I couldn't detect her presence in the slightest」

「Her speciality is being able to hide/disappear within the shadows/darkness」

The girl stuck out her chest and she had a slightly boasted/proud look on her face…….I'm not sure if being good at hiding was something to be proud of, But what I do know is that her breasts, were indeed something to be proud about. (Note: easier way of saying this is, her tits are huge!)

「Like I thought, wasn't she intentionally trying to hide her presence!」

「Well I guess what you say makes sense」

「Don't just suddenly agree with me! And what's with that dangerous looking sword, isn't it a violation of the law to hold that thing in public?」

「This is a piece of art. I also have a license for it, so it's not a problem」

「The fact that the sword can cut people is strange!!」

「No problem」

The girl quietly repeated her statement, and as if she was showing off her sword, she pointed it towards Taiyou.

「Even if that's the case, you can't just go around and start cutting people up right?」

「That too, is, no problem」

「nononononono—-」

Obviously there was a huge problem—-The moment she casually claimed that chopping people up was "not a problem" I felt shiver go up my spine.

「It will all be good, after cutting them up, isn't there always people that will clean up after me?」

Whilst saying such cruel things, she cutely tilted her head, and looked towards Sakura as if she was trying to confirm the validity of her words.

「Well now, what were we talking about again? I don't really comprehend the conversation just now」

Although she was feigning innocence, her unnatural tone of voice told a completely different story.

「Is this the forgetful giveaway stall?」

「Mhmm, I have absolutely no recollection of such things ever occuring」

「Well, apparently that's how it is」

the girl faced Taiyou and pointed her sword right at him.

「Are you prepared…..to die?」

A killing intent that was three times thicker than before rose up and assaulted Taiyou.

It was after all a killing intent so strong that it could bind his movements, however, having already experienced this feeling multiple times in a short period he was able to gain some experience dealing with it and he was slightly more

used to it. In order to rile himself up Taiyou released a fearsome warcry and savagely headed towards the girl.

instead of shrinking back in fear, he faced her head on.

「——tsu」

Perhaps it was because she did not expect him to actually rush at her, the woman's noble face was lit brightly in surprise. Facing such a Taiyou, she pulled back the tip of her sword for a moment.

However, Taiyou did not let her escape. He extended his hands forwards and faster than she could sheath her sword into the scabbard, Taiyou grabbed the sides of the sword with both his hands——and he put strength into his arms.

BAKIN! (*snap*)

both of his arms crossed each other and in that moment a snapping sound could be heard echoing in the surrondings.

Taiyou gripped the girl's sword…….and crazily enough it seems that he snapped it in two!

Completely blowing her mind, the girl looks at her broken blade in utter shock. It would seem that Sakura was also in the same condition, her eye's seemed to grow so big they would pop out and she did not expect for such a development to happen that she was at a loss for words.

It's now or never!

Thinking such things Taiyou threw the broken piece of the sword which he held in his arms directly at Sakura.

He thought that if he threw the sword at the mysterious girl she would just deflect the sword easily, therefore he threw it at Sakura whom he predicted was not a martial artist.

And just like he predicted, Sakura could not react to his throw so the mysterious white girl overtook the broken sword piece flying towards Sakura and easily deflected it away.

A metallic sound resounded and sparks scattered everywhere. In that moment of opportunity Taiyou turned his body and together with Hera, he dashed away with lighting speed and escaped.

「Haa……..Haa……..If I have ran this far, It should be safe right?」

Taiyou whom ran away with all his might had gone out of the residential district,and he arrived in the down town where it was bustling with people everywhere. Taiyou had a frantic expression on his face, after barely escaping he was out of air and was trying to catch his breath on the roadside, passersby who saw him all gave a doubtful/suspicious look.

Although he was being stared like he was some weird person, funnily enough he actually welcomed it right now. If there are this many witnesses around, there was a less likely chance of him being attacked in public.

「Haa…….I thought I was going die…….. More like, If I had to fight her again one more time, I would be 100% dead」

When any one of his emotions became too overpowering or approached their limits, Taiyou would on the contrary become calm and composed, that was the kind of unique personality he had. Even now it was the same, faced with overwhelming killing intent he literally felt his death approaching but instead of pissing his pants, he actually became calm enough to analyse the difference in each others strengths and make a judgement based on that to maximise his survivability.

An adult or a child?…….No it was more like seeing the birth of a professional hand-to-hand fighter take its first baby steps.

There was a huge difference in strength between him and that mysterious girl.

facing such a woman he was able to create a moment of opportunity and

escape with his life.

He imagined that it would be difficult to catch them off guard like that again a second time.

If they were to meet again, he thought that the next time he would surely be cut down, he was overlooking this as if he was seeing the problem from someone else's eyes.

「Even so, Taiyou-chan you were so cool～. As expected of my Taiyou-chan～」

「Before you say anything else, Hera, I have a favour to ask of you. Are you able to part from me and act on your own?」

「Separate from you? uhm, with your level the way it is right now, I can separate from you up to a radius of 1 kilometres～」

「So even that is dependant on my level huh……..well for now this kind of this is not something I should worry about. you said that you can do around 1 kilometre radius right?」

「What would you like me to do?」

「Won't you find Kotone and the other girls for me? The situation became quite messy when I was battling and beating the men dressed in black, and as soon as possible I would prefer it if we could regroup together」

「I understand, leave it to me～!」

After saying such things, Hera rigorously flaps her wings and took off into the night sky.

Taiyou saw her off and then he leaned his back against a nearby wall, his whole body was completely exhausted.

It was as if his hands suddenly remembered to feel again, pain shot through his fingers into his arms.

When he looked closer, the palms of his hands had cuts on it and bloodstains could be seen. It probably happened when he gripped her katana and broke it off with his bare hands.

He fumbled around his pockets in search for something to stop the bleeding.

However, he was, after all just a high school student boy living alone, things like handkerchiefs or tissues was not something a school boy would bring around in his pockets and he did not have such things on him either.

When he thought that there was no other choice but to tear the hem of his shirt to use it as a bandage….

「Here, You can use, this」

In front of his eyes a white handkerchief was presented to him.

When he looked to see who it was, he discovered that it was the white mysterious girl he had just fought with.

Chapter 12: Dodging the Question

Chapter 14: Thick and Thin

Chapter 14

Chapter 13: Code name: Shirokiyami

Chapter 15: Three girl's makes a Harem

To the sudden event that occurred Taiyou’s head went blank. However that was only for a moment and he soon got his bearings and hopped away like a frog and gained some distance from the white woman in one breath’s time.

The pedestrians who saw such a peculiar action by Taiyou, gave him various kinds of gazes/reactions. A business salary man had a strange look on his face as he alternated looking between the girl and Taiyou, A mother told their kid “Shh, don’t look at them” and she hurriedly brang her curious kids away from the scene.

The people around him were giving him an over exaggerated amount of attention, however, if you compare it to what happened to him moments ago, where a Japanese Katana sword was pointed right at him, their reactions would be even more crazier if they saw such a scene, in fact this kind of reaction would have been insufficient.

Taiyou was displaying a posture of extreme vigilance but it seems that such actions were a futile and vain effort. The white girl had a handkerchief in her hands, instead of the Japanese Katana, and there seemed to be no other hidden motives in her actions.

Both her hostility and her killing intent was so meek that he could barely feel it.

Honestly, the feeling was so different that he almost thought that they were different people, Taiyou was bewildered/perplexed.

Looking at the girl, he couldn't hold it any longer and he asked her a question.

「You, Why are you here?」

「Handkerchief」

「Eh?」

「More importantly, you? That hand is bleeding 」

Taiyou was still breathing irregularly, and he looked at the handkerchief was had been presented towards his hands.

It seems she's trying to lend me her handkerchief in order to stop my bleeding?

「Why…….?」

「Having a handkerchief, is part of a woman's etiquet, te」(Note: she talks in broken sentences: Etiquette) 「No that's not what I am asking you…….」

「—it, was what a guy, once told, me 」

「A man taught you those etiquette?!」

「After that time, I held it on with me, where ever, I went」

「From that moment onwards? You haven't replaced it with a new one?」

She tilted her neck slightly, and was thinking for a little while.

「……I don't really, remember?」

「Please! can't you start talking in a more political fashion!? It almost seemed like you had a total memory loss or something!」

「…….my secretary, talk, to you?」

「Like I said please talk in a more political manner!」

「……would you die……..for, me?」

「This is so hopeless!」

A comical dialog between these two people seemed to have unfolded on the

road side. The pedestrians who saw the both of them would hurriedly try to avoid their path by walking faster, and this made Taiyou remember something slightly uncomfortable.

「We are getting way to side tracked here, you, why exactly did you come here for, that's what I am asking you」

「That is, I came to recieve, compen……sation」

「compensation?」

「For the katana you broke, I want, compensation」

「Oioi……..」

Taiyou was astonished beyond belief.

「So you came here just for that?」

「It's not just, a small, matter」

The mysterious white girl arched her eyebrows. Since the first time I met her, she showed me an expression of displeasure. (pout) Although she was already a beautiful girl to begin with, maybe it was because it was the first time since they were both together that the tension had completely disappeared, but he thought that she was extremely cute.

「That child (the katana)…….. is my second favourite masterpiece, moreover……..it's really, expensive」

「When you say expensive……How much are we talking about here?」

The subject changed to money, and this time he mentally prepared himself.

「It's around……..seven digits」

「That's ridiculous! you could buy a car with that kind of money!?」

「That's….not it, when I said around, I meant that it was crossing over to eight digits」

「Can't you buy a house with that? just what kind of sword was it!?」

「That sword can be considered cheap, my favourite sword is worth…..」

「Your favourite sword is worth?」

I gulped a huge amount of saliva in expectation.

「national treasure」

「for reals?」

「truly. That's why, its price… less…….Just like how my smile is」

「Aren't you exaggerating a little too much!」

Although sure she was cute. but saying her smile is priceless was like saying she was a hooker. (Note: in Japanese the act of selling smiles was a term that can refer to a prostitutes way of attracting men to buy their "smiles")「Complain, to the person, who taught me to say, such things」

「Who is this person really!?」

「…….Po」

「I understand, all I need to know is that the person who taught you such things is truly a despicable fellow!」

unexpectedly Taiyou was a little riled up by the conversation. He hit the wall next to him with his full power. With a strength of 30, the wall crumbled easily.

「That reminds me. When you broke my sword a little, while ago」

「Hmm?」

Her voice still contained a little bit of grudge for what he did to her sword as she talked to him.

「You have amazing strength. I was able to deflect the sword that you…… threw at me, but, my hands, they are still shaking/rattling. It was a dreadfully

straight aim you had」

「Well I'm not sure if it was all that accurate」

「The secret to your strength, I want to know」

「Well, even if you say secret—」

He could not really mention the fact that he was capable of leveling up, as it would definitely lead to huge misunderstanding, However, in the next moment. The facade that he tried to put out of feigning ignorance was blown away by the next set of statements.

「The power you displayed, with the amount of muscle on your body…….. applying the physical laws of nature……is most definitely, weird」

「–tsu!」

「There must be some other source to your strength. maybe its power you obtained from chi/qi? or is it perhaps, the thing known as…….magic?」

The white girl took a good guess but she was still quite far from the real reason. Although most her guessing had been off the bulls-eye, Taiyou had to recover his trembling heart from exposing the "secret" and he quickly returned to pretending to be senile/dumb/innocent.

「These days becoming reincarnated as a cheat character is really common…….don't you think that this may be my second life?」

「That kind of, Unrealistic……thing, I refuse to believe it」

「For you, things like Chi/qi or Magic is that something that is supposed to be realistic!?」

「By the way, for your information, I do not, use, either…….of those things」

「You don't?! From the flow of the conversation, you completely fooled me into believing you were some sort of magician or something」

「chi/qi is unnecessary. Physics/law of nature, is important. That's because, "being big, fast and strong. if you have those three things you wont lose to anyone" is what someone erotic once told me」

「I think you mean to say admirable person, these particular words are logical

and seem straightforward」

「No, it truly was…….An ero person who said it. An admirable person would have a thick bible book, however, that person had a thin book in his hands, that's why」

「Indeed, I have no idea what you are saying!」

「The company and Chris's thin book……..I love these things」

「This Chris person's gender, its probably better if I don't ask you about it right?!」

after exchanging such a comedic conversation with the white girl, Taiyou complete let down his guard and couldn't think of such a girl as his enemy anymore.

She was cute, a little bit strange, and she reminded him of someone that was familiar to him, she was the type of girl he couldn't hate.

It almost seemed as if their previous wild encounter/battle was a complete lie.

Therefore, he was awfully confused. He could not grasp the girls real personality.

She wasn't his ally, but at the same time he could not see her as an enemy either.

She was an opponent he fought once before, and even now the wound in the palm of his hands would begin to pound/pulse whenever he remembered the scene. It was difficult for him to make a clear-cut decision as to their relationship status.

Whilst he was thinking about what to do.

「Taiyou-chan! I've found them〜!」

Hera appeared right in the empty space beside the white girl and came flying towards him.

Seeing her figure instantaneously teleport near him, Taiyou was still surprised as he was not used to it.

「Uwaa?」

The white girl leaned her head in doubt. Taiyou was flustered and he tried to cover up his actions.

「It, its nothing. A telephone call just came in, that's all」

Taiyou grabbed out his smart phone which was still broken and pretended to touch the screen, he then put the phone next to his ear.

「Hello」

Whilst saying such things, he winks at Hera.

Hera nods her head in understanding and gave a thumbs up to Taiyou whilst looking at the white girl.

「What's up, did you find them?」

「Yes～, I found them～」

「The place? can you please tell me where it is?」

「Its over here～」

「I understand, I'll come over right now」

He was talking with a fairy nobody could see, normally people would think he was crazy if he started talking in a soliloque, however by holding up a phone to his ears, in this modern age he splendidly solved the problem and could become less conspicuous/suspicious.

Taiyou whilst pretending to be on the phone, gave a slight bow towards the white girl, he returned to her the handkerchief he obtained and hurriedly tried to depart.

Following Hera's guide he started to depart, but he turned back to glance at the white girl.

She was just staring silently at him, and she did not seem to intend to follow him.

Looking at her not moving to follow, Taiyou was slightly relieved.

All the albino coloured girl did was stare silently into the back figure of a young boy as he continued on his path.

「I was…….being avoided/warded off」

As she muttered she things, she let out a slight sigh of dejection.

When compared to other boys and girls of her age, just by a little bit……..Her physical strength was above average. Her eyesight was extraordinary like a savannah huntress, and her hearing was also exceptional. it was to such an extent where, if she had been stuck in traffic she could hear the sounds of music coming out from a person wearing earplugs without any problems at all.

There was nothing her ears could not zone in on. From Taiyou's phone, she could not hear any form of conversation being said by the party on the other side of the phone. From her perspective, it was as if the only reason he did that was to escape from her presence.

The stains of fresh blood on the handkerchief reminded her of the existence of the boy whom she had cut in the palm with her katana. Thinking back, it was natural for him to want to avoid her after such a thing.

Although it was a natural reaction, even then the action of him trying to avoid her, made her heart ache with sadness, such was the problems of a pubescent young girl.

She returned from the road she came from, and her retreating figure, seemed to somehow look really lonely.

Chapter 13: Code name: Shirokiyami

Chapter 15: Three girl's makes a Harem

Chapter 15

Chapter 14: Thick and Thin

Chapter 16: Protecting Loved Ones

At Night: Taiyou dashes through the shopping district. He ran so fast that he would almost crash into the surrounding pedestrians, or sometimes he would stumble over the maintenance holes/manholes, but he ignored all this and continued to follow Hera as fast as he could.

「Hey Hera, are the girls are safe?」

「Yes, They are safe～」

Hera answers me in a very carefree manner. Taiyou responded to Hera's comment with an "is that so?", and as expected he was worried for the girls wellbeing. Hearing it from Hera was one thing, but unless he actually confirmed it with his own eyes, it was not possible for Taiyou to feel relieved.

Whilst keeping such feelings inside him, Hera was guiding him towards a place that he was deeply familiar with.

「Isn't this……The apartment I live in? 」

「Yes desu～. ummm…….」

Hera was floating in the air and looking around for the three sisters. Before she was able to find them, the girls themselves appeared.

「Taiyou-san!」

Although he only heard one voice, it was their speciality of being able to speak all at the same time. Immediately after, the figures of the girls could be seen dashing from the shadow of the building.

It was the peculiar identical triplets.

The three people with the same face: Kotone, Suzune and Kazane simultaneously appeared and rushed over towards Taiyou.

「Uwaaa!」

They came up really close to him and all at once they pounced/jumped on him. Pressed by the sudden weight of all three girls combined, Taiyou's lower body was slightly strained.

Due to the abrupt action of the girls he lost his balance, he was in a position where the three girls were laying on top of him like he was some sort of table. Crash, Boom, bang! Sounds like this were heard as he fell over.

「Uwaaaannn, Taiyou-san…….Taiyou-san!」

Kotone repeatedly called out his name with a loud voice. She was holding to his right hand firmly like a childish young girl.

The other girls were also in a similar position. The second tallest girl Suzune was wrapped around his waist like a toddler and Kazane who was the smallest of the trio was holding on to his left arm. Being tightly gripped in a snake like hold by the three, Taiyou could barely move a muscle let alone try to get up.

No, If he really wanted to try and get up he could easily do it, this is because, due to leveling up, his strength level's as quoted by the white girl is "beyond the laws of nature, a strange power" If he was motivated enough to get up, he could stand with all three girls still stuck to his body.

However, he did no such thing. Previously when they were escaping, Taiyou said to the girls "Leave this to me, you guys should head off first", these kind of words were usually a precursor to the death of a character in many films, and without a doubt this caused the girls to become really worried about him.

Therefore, he let the girls do as they pleased for a little while.

「Kyaah!」

Suddenly, Kotone let out a scream. Checking to see what had happened Taiyou gazed in her direction, Kotone had a surprised expression on her face as she looked at Taiyou's hand and her own clothes.

After looking at the situation he understood what she was so shocked about.

The wound he received in the palm of his hands from the white girl, was not yet completely healed. Due to her being glued to his body so closely, there was a sticky patch of red blood that was attached to her clothes.

The amount of blood that was flowing from his hands were almost like a horror scene where the characters would smear blood all over the glass windows. She released another scream.

「Koto-chan! What's wrong?!」

「Taiyou-san's hands, is this…..Perhaps a cut wound? 」

「The wound seems quite deep……..Wo, wont it become infected? 」

「I think it looks alright……The cut was clean. Suzu-chan, Handkerchief」

「Here you go」

Kotone received a white handkerchief from Suzune, she folded it into layers and wrapped it around Taiyou's palms. She proceeded to wrap it around his arms in more layers and pressed tightly to stop the bleeding.

「Itatatata, wha, what are you doing?」(Note: itatata= ouch, ouch ouch)

「Please endure it, I'm stopping the bleeding. Suzu-chan, Kaza-chan, you guys hold his wrist」

「Yes!」

「I understand!」

The two listened to their older sister and grabbed unto Taiyou's wrist. Their grip was as strong as a vice.

「You guys….What on earth…..」

「Because the wound is not dirty, we can put off disinfecting it for a while

longer」

「Yeah, First we need to stop the bleeding」

「If we don't it may get dangerous due to blood loss」

「Ahh…..You guys want to stop my bleeding by applying pressure? 」

Taiyou finally understood their actions. Although disinfecting the wound was also an important process, to normal people when they lose as much blood as him, it is likely that they will go into cardiac arrest and die. The analogy of disinfection is like, if you don't eat food for 1 week the most that will happen is you will starve, however, if a human doesn't drink water for a mere 3 days they will die, it was similar to that.

The concept behind their actions was precisely to stop the bleeding first before later disinfecting the wound,

「You guys, are really good at this. Where did you learn such a thing? 」

Even though he asked, the girls didn't respond to him.

It wasn't like they were ignoring him, on the contrary it was the opposite.

They were so focused on their job in tending to him that they couldn't respond. They were so worried for him when they saw the wound that they couldn't hear his voice when he spoke.

It was almost as if they were tending to their own wounds……..No it was even more dedication than that, they were desperately trying to stop the bleeding of his palms.

「……..It's really warm」

Suddenly, such an impression leaked from his mouth.

He said those words spontaneously, and from the depths of his heart, he really felt like it was filled with warmth.

Kotone was applying pressure on his palms, whilst Suzune and Kazane was gripping around his wrist to slow the blood flow. Although he was gripped so tightly, their hands felt really warm to Taiyou.

Suddenly, he began to notice something.

The palpitations of a beating heart.

It was different from his own heartbeat. From the three girls, their heart beats was getting conveyed to him from their hands. Surely enough, although they were three separate people the three sisters had the exact same rhythm of heart beats.

「Is this just a coincidence?……no」

At first he didn't believe their synchronicity but he soon threw such notions of impossibility away. This is because, the three people moved in the same exact pace and rhythm as they tended to him.

It was like watching a wave that piled on top of each other. Nevertheless, the wave would flow at the same pace.

It was not something that could occur merely by coincidence.

(After all they are identical triplets) Taiyou thought to himself.

At the same time he felt slightly uncomfortable. This is because amongst the four of them there was one heart beat that was different.

It was of course his own heartbeat. It was what he was accustomed to hearing, however it was a different rhythm to the girls.

Knowing that he was interrupting the flow of their hearts with his irregular pulse he felt slightly guilty.

Because of this, he tried to get his hands away from them.

「Ahh……You can't move yet」

Kotone used more strength to grasp his hand in place. Suzune and Kazane also followed suit and they tightly held onto his wrist whilst turning their gaze towards him.

「…..My bad」

Whilst apologizing he once again remembered the pleasant feeling of his hands being held.

Their hands were soft, and they were warm. This was……an experienced he never felt before in his life.

It was no longer the cold hand which lost a lot of blood, it became a hand that was filled with heartfelt emotions.

「…….」

He silently gripped Kotone's hand in return and placed the other two's hand on top of his.

「Taiyou-san?」

「Thank you」

Although it was embarrassing for him to say it out, he managed to get the words out. Most likely, the three sisters didn't really need such words to be said.

However, he felt like the foreign substance that…….intruded on their harmonious existence.

If he didn't say the words of appreciation, he thought that it wouldn't be conveyed properly, that's why he said it.

When he gave them his thanks, the three sisters began to get flustered.

「you, you didn't have to, the people that have to say thank you is us」

「That's right, you were the one who saved us from those people」

「If we didn't have you, we would have become guinea pigs right about now」

「Ahh, that's also true」

He actually didn't dare to admit that he had been thanking them for a different matter, so he just agreed with them.

He thought if he stated the real reason, he would seem pathetic.

That's why he just opted to hold their hands with a little more strength.

More so than the amount of strength he put into his grip, his grip was filled with sincerity.

For a little while, all they did was hold into each other's hands.

It was in the middle of the night at the residential area, right in front of his apartment entrance.

One boy and three girls were sitting on the ground whilst they had their hands overlapped with each other.

If they were sighted by some pedestrians they would probably be seen as weird/strange people, but thankfully at this time of the night, nobody was passing by the road.

The amount of time they were there was unknown but it was enough for the floor to grow cold on their bottoms.

Meanwhile, it would seem that the girl's emergency treatment had begun to work and the bleeding of his palms had been stopped.

However, even when the bleeding was stopped the four people continued to hold hands without separating.

The girls were finally able to turn their eyes away from his palms as the bleeding had stopped. It was as if they were waiting for the bleeding to stop before they looked away.

Seeing such reactions, he thought the girls were really sweet/precious and way too good for someone like him. Even now, he wanted to embrace them.

He wanted to, but right now he couldn't do it.

Taiyou was a peculiar young boy that lived by a set of very fastidious rules.

If he wanted to be together with the girls, he would first have to convey his idea's to the other party, and then only after reaching a resolution on the problem would he dare to make a move on them. Whilst thinking such things, he looked downwards as he talked to the girls.

「What do you guys want to do from now on?」

「「「We want to be together with Taiyou-san!!」」」

The three talked in their usual chorus.

「Thank you. But that's not what I was referring to. What I really want to talk about is what we can do in order to realize our objectives. In order for us to be together, we need to work around the "problem" you guys are facing and reach a good solution」

Hearing Taiyou's words the three girls glanced at each other, and looked down towards the ground whilst thinking in silence.

This question was too difficult for them to answer and they couldn't figure out a solution.

It couldn't really be helped. At any rate, their opponent this time around was in fact their real father. No matter how unsympathetic he was, or how outrageous his behaviour was towards them. Naturally these pure girls couldn't really take action against their own father.

For these three children, their father was an irrational existence.

On one side they revered him like he was a god, yet on the other side, his existence can become akin to the devil.

「Well……What should we do, I wonder」 (note: Taiyou speaking)

「If that's the case, I can give you a good solution」 (note: Sakura speaking)

「Junishima……Sakura……」

Her name was gently called out in quiet voice.

Before he noticed it, Sakura was already in front of him and all the hairs in Taiyou's body stood up.

Chapter 14: Thick and Thin

Chapter 16: Protecting Loved Ones

Chapter 16

Chapter 15: Three girl's makes a Harem

Chapter 17: Kiss all Three!

With the appearance of Junishima Sakura, The problem that the girls couldn’t solve came crashing right in front of them. Confirming that Sakura was indeed here, Taiyou thought that he needed to protect the three girls, however even before he had the chance to react, the three girls let go of his hands.

Suzune and Kazane went to the front of him and Kotone being the eldest was standing at the front of her sisters as if she was trying to protect/shield all of them with her body.

Their actions weren’t planned out, however they did not show the slightest hesitation to jumping in front of Taiyou.

Without wavering they jumped in front of their adversary, the girls had strong resolve and was willingly volunteering themselves to become his shield. Taiyou understood their kind intentions.

However, He wasn’t going to let them do whatever they pleased. Taiyou believed that being protected by girls just for the reason that he was slightly injured, was not something he could accept, as a man he thought that he should do something.

Thinking such thoughts, Taiyou gently pulled Kotone backwards and he

stepped forward in front of the girls to replace their position.

「Taiyou-san!」

「I'm alright, thanks to you guys my bleeding has stopped 」

After he gave a smile to the girls, his line of vision once again turned to focus on Sakura.

Her appearance had not changed at all since he last met her. Her cold-hearted/piercing smile, the tight skirt she was wearing and even the atmosphere she exuded were all the same. There was only one aspect of her that that was different from before.

Her intimidation factor raised another level. It was as if he was facing some sort of boss character from an RPG that appeared to block his way whenever he reached a certain milestone.

Taiyou was leading the vanguard and faced her head on.

「Are you even human?」

Whilst he said this, he was looking around his vicinity——-he was looking for Hera, after finding her he exchanged looks with her to communicate something.

「Roger desu～!」

After their secret exchange Hera saluted Taiyou and flew into the air and left. Hera seemed to have understood that Taiyou wanted her to scout around the area. After she flew around the vicinity, she looked at Taiyou and made a circle symbol on top of her head with her hands. (Note: a Circle in Japan is commonly used as a positive symbol meaning OK/good/all clear)「Yes, I am a human being, why do you ask?」

「…….It would seem, that I don't "sense" any of your bodyguards with you this time around」

Making use of the information he obtained from Hera, He tried to bluff/intimidate Sakura.

「Oh? I didn't know you had such a skill/ability」

「You never know, what I just said may have been just a bluff」

「That can't be true. You seemed so definite about your statement. If you're telling me that what you said was a bluff, then you certainly have the qualifications/talent to become an actor」

「I don't particularly like Olive Oil, you know?」(Note: This particular expression is about how Japanese people drink a little bit of olive oil before going out for drinks, in order to line their stomachs to stop them from getting drunk. If you are an actor in Japan it would seem that going out for drinks and socialising with producers and such is the norm) 「That is a shame, that is one of the critical aspects of the job」

Both of them were "smiling daggers" at each other whilst exchanging a superficial conversation.

「Don't worry, I'm not here to fight with you guys. Actually, it's more like I can't interfere」

「You can't?」

「All my subordinates are currently all injured and they aren't of any use to me, moreover, the backer that was providing my organisation with funds has mysteriously disappeared without any reason. The girl's father was screaming and complaining about something or other, but the fact is I don't have any more chess pieces under my control, and there is nothing I can do about that」

「Aren't you giving up way too easily? 」

「Who knows? I could just be playing a trick on you, whilst keeping something up my sleeves」

「……If what you said just now was all just acting, it would be my pleasure to get deceived」

It seemed as though she was also trying to play tricks on his mind, and she was able to construct a believable lie in an instant. In terms of being able to physiologically manipulate one's opponent, he thought that she was at least one to two times better than him at it.

Although at first…..He was the one trying to befuddle her with his witty conversational skills, it was in fact him who began to get absorbed by her pace.

Taiyou swallows down his regret/frustrations, and straightforwardly asks her one more time.

「Are you really, a human being?」

「I have a name called Junishima」

「Your smile seems so untrustworthy/cheeky, that I don't think I can believe you」

「Fufufu」(*Laughter* in a lady like manner)

「Then, please enlighten me as to why you've come alone?」

「Aren't I allowed to come by myself? Even if I am by myself, you never know……I might be able to defeat you and bring away the girls by myself」

「…….You don't really seem that strong to me」

He once again, took a good look at Sakura. She had killer legs that could probably strangle you to death. Boobs that would burst out of her clothes at any given moment….. And to top it off, her overall style was like a model.

Although it may have been too presumptuous of him to say it, her body looked nothing like a seasoned warrior.

「I could say the same to you, your body does not look as if it could destroy walls」

「Muuu……」

Taiyou was once again at a loss for words. These were words which could also apply to the White Girl. (Note: white girl = shirokiyami) To begin with, the white

girl appearance also looked frail and delicate, as if she could be blown away by the wind.

That's why he decided that people could not be judged by their appearance.

In such a case, Sakura having a war potential was not so unrealistic anymore…….Taiyou re took his fighting stance and carefully watched Sakura's movements.

「Oh? Are you finally going to believe in my words? Don't you think you are getting tricked way too easily? 」

「……Even so, there is no disadvantage in taking precautions 」

「That is also reasonable」

For a little while, they were both just staring at each other in silence.

Hera and the three sisters were all watching with suspense as to what would happen next.

「Fufu, Let's leave it at this for today」

Sakura smiled gracefully.

「Because I, am truly weak. I don't have any individual battle power. If I could do something, it would be to slap someone's cheeks with a bundle of money」

「What a cheap technique」(note: Taiyou is referring to her ability to bribe people)「If it can achieve a desirable outcome and achieve my goals, no matter the methods I believe it is good to use it」

「I also agree with such a statement completely」

「Fufu, Aren't the two of us unexpectedly quite matching for each other?」

「From the way it is now, It is more likely that we will grow to hate each other」

「Even if that is so, that could also be a lovely/wonderful development」

Whilst saying such things, Sakura had a bewitching smile on her face.

Taiyou suddenly notices that he was already sucked into the conversation led by Sakura once again. She had a way with people that was able to enrapture them with her words.

Although it was a troublesome thing, he did not feel like it was unpleasant to converse with Sakura. In fact, he quite liked the witty conversations he shared with her.

If only they were able to meet under different circumstances…. one where the three sisters weren't involved, it may have been different between them—- As he was thinking such things.

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan!」

Hera begins to panic all of a sudden, and she flew in front of Taiyou. As he was unable to actually respond to Hera with words, He just looked at her with a glance that said "What's Wrong?".

「Taiyou-chan you are being aimed at! There, there and there……..Even on the rooftop, there are so many people, with sniper rifles all aimed at you! 」

「—tsu!」

Taiyou's expression changes, and he immediately looks towards the directions Hera pointed out to him.

「Oh? It seems with the kind of face you are currently showing that you have realised what's going on. What an interesting person you are—-Although it may be a little late」

「You have snipers!」

「You are most correct/insightful. Then without me explaining…..You understand the position you are in right? 」

「Your actions are way to exaggerated, using such an underhanded move」

「It is you who is unable to see how important this matter is. If we can establish a method in which we can make a woman stay permanently youthful, the amount of money we could obtain is not in the mere hundred millions, it would result in profits exceeding a trillion. Facing such a large sum of money "it is unavoidable" that mere words cannot resolve the issue」

「……..The fact that your argument is so persuasive makes me feel irritated」

「Fufu, Now then, It seems that I have you completely cornered with all the snipers aiming at you, How do you wish to proceed, I wonder? Do you have the

power to dodge bullets?」

「……」

Taiyou was silent, that kind of power……right now he did not possess the ability to get out of his predicament.

Seeing Taiyou not moving a muscle, the three sisters began to talk.

「Taiyou-san, what does she mean by?」

「A sniper….?」

「—tsu! Are you being aimed at?!」

「You girls don't have to worry, none of my men will aim their gun's at you」

Sakura said such things with her usual expression.

「Since meeting you, this may well be the most trustworthy thing you've said」

Taiyou thought, that Sakura was a very wise/clever person, she was the type of person that would be meticulous in their approach to achieving their objectives and it was true that she didn't want the girls to be hurt.

In other words, because she wanted them as "test subjects" the safety of the three sister's bodies were most likely guaranteed.

「I can't say that I dislike your way of thinking, as expected it would seem that we are quite compatible with each other. If you weren't my enemy, it would be enough for me to want to go on a date with you」

「That's one is a complete lie isn't it?」

「Oh? I couldn't get you to believe me this time? Fufu, I guess, I'm reaping what I sow after lying so much」

Whilst giving him a smile she quietly observes Taiyou. Her pupils seem to constrict themselves, as if asking Taiyou "Well, what are you going to do now?".

Taiyou was thinking.

About what he could do to overcome such a pinch/situation. He was desperately searching for a solution……However no matter how hard he thought he could not figure out what to do. He had absolutely no method of

dealing with the long range specialists.

In conclusion, there was nothing he could do in the current situation.

He felt despair creeping in and his thoughts started to darken.

Sakura's objective is to kidnap the three sisters. Furthermore, he could not stop her.

That is to say, he either got shot for resisting and the girls would get kidnapped, or he could just stand there and do nothing as the girls get taken away right in front of him.

Those two miserable options were the only ones he could take right now.

Although the things he could do were different, they both would result in the girls being kidnapped. If those were the only two options, he thought that it would be more logical to just suck on his thumbs and obediently hand the girls over…….

(What am I thinking!?)

Taiyou clears his head by shaking it, and he threw away such negative thoughts from his mind.

Seeing such a reaction from Taiyou, Sakura let out a thin smile and raises her hand high above her head. Sakura joined her thumb and the middle finger together, and readied a pose to snap her fingers together.

With that kind of signal, it was obvious that the bullet was about to arrive from the location Hera pointed out as soon as Sakura clicked her fingers.

(What should I do, what can I do?!)

「I will ask you one last time, Won't you kindly hand over the girls to me?」

Though he was asked, Taiyou had his lips sealed shut.

He could not find the answer……He could not answer such a question!

In that moment, the three girls as if trying to protect Taiyou, surrounded him from all sides. Their faces was filled with determination.

「Fall back, you guys don't have to do something like this—-」

The girls did something that was unnecessary for Taiyou. Originally their safety was supposedly guaranteed by Sakura, and he didn't want this to change.

Therefore Taiyou was going to tell them to back off and gently push the girls aside.

However

「Taiyou-chan!」

Hera suddenly calls out towards Taiyou, as if she had discovered something once again.

「You must kiss these girls～」

What he heard coming out of Hera's mouth was a completely ballistic/absurd proposition.

Chapter 15: Three girl's makes a Harem

Chapter 17: Kiss all Three!

Chapter 17

Chapter 16: Protecting Loved Ones

Chapter 18: Hayakawa Sisters

「What are you doing just staring into space～? Quickly you must give them each a kiss～」

Hera was standing up shouting at him, However, Taiyou had a face which said “Why are you telling me to do such things so suddenly?” whilst glaring at Hera.

This was definitely not the time and place for such things, and they weren’t in a lover’s relationship either.

「Quick-a-ly～, You must Kiss them～」

Even after he glared at Hera she did not turn meek, instead she directly looked at Taiyou, and almost as if she had eight eyes like a bug she urged him on.

When it was to this extent he figured that there must be some sort of reason as to why Hera was acting like this.

Telling him to do such strange thing and at this exact moment.

He thought that it could possibly have some meaning to it, therefore he faced the three sisters.

At that moment, all his doubts disappeared and his hesitations were blown away.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane.

Although it was only for an instant, the three girls met their eyes with Taiyou's.

The same rhythm, the same wavelength.

The three sisters in that instant were looking towards Taiyou with the same gaze on their face.

It was filled with love/adoration and determination.

The moment Taiyou saw such eyes which had all their condensed feelings in it, Taiyou's heart skipped a beat.

There are certain things person can only learn if they put in the effort, and at this time, it was one of those things people could just naturally understand when the time came.

The sincere gaze that the three girls looked at him with, he just instinctually knew what it meant in one go.

It was the kind of look that meant that they would sacrifice everything for the person they loved, it was filled with that kind of determination.

That was the true colours of their looks.

Charm: 65535

The reason the girls felt so strongly for him was without a doubt due to the influence of this figure. It was most definitely, not because of his own attractiveness or charm.

Even Taiyou could discern something as simple as this and he was not foolish enough to misunderstand.

Even if that was the case, the fact that they were letting Taiyou into their hearts at this juncture was also unmistakable. This was a phenomenon which happened for a fact.

In that case, at least.

I want to repay their sincere feelings and give it my all as well.

Taiyou silently moves his hand and entwines it around Kotone's waist, he pulls her in close and embraces her in his arms.

Kotone didn't expect this to happen at all and her face began to tremble.

Just like that, he gave her a Kiss! (**Illustration: Kiss All Three!**)

「—tsu!」(*surprised*)

At first she was really shocked and opened her eyes wide, however she soon melted into his arms, and she accepted his everything. She wrapped her arms around his back, and she entrusted both her mind and body to Taiyou.

「Koto-chan…..」

「That looks nice….」

Looking at their elder sister making out with Taiyou, they started muttering in an intoxicated tone.

Their feelings came out uncontrollably and became words.

After a good while, their kiss was finally over. The two girls had slightly opened lips, and as if they were going to faint, they released a hot sigh from their lips.

「Thank you, Kotone」

After hearing his voice, Kotone's legs began to waver and as if she lost the strength to stand, she slowly slid down to the ground.

Next was Suzune's turn. He turned to face her and he tenderly held on to her shoulders whilst she was standing on her tiptoes and puckering up her lips.

After a while the kiss ended, and just like her sister, Suzune's legs began to sway and she sat next to Kotone on the floor.

Last of all it was Kazane's turn. Although at first he felt guilty about kissing Kazane because it felt like he was committing a crime, right now, beyond those feelings he truly felt like she was just so precious/dear to him.

Taiyou kneels on one knee, and just as he kissed the other two, he also kissed Kazane in the same way.

Kazane's lips were as expected just as soft as the other two. And her beating heart was also just like the other two.

If he kept on kissing them, or if he could go to the next level and do something above kissing, would the girls behave in the same exact manner?……And would

they be able to share the sensations that their body experiences? If they could share such pleasure amongst themselves, the experience was surely wonderful Taiyou thought.

Whilst thinking such things, he reluctantly parted from her lips and Kazane joined her two sisters slumping to the floor.

Now then, With this—

「TE RE RE TE TE TE –♪ Taiyou-chan has Leveled Up～!」

「What?!」

The atmosphere was lovey dovey and even Sakura was effected by it as she was intently watching the scene between them whilst she gently swallowed the saliva she held in her mouth due to the tension.

That was all blown away when Hera made her usual rhythmical and comical announcement.

It was a completely unexpected development for him, raising his level was the last thing Taiyou expected to happen.

Watching Taiyou level up, Hera had a proud/elated facial expression.

「With this you have reached level 5 desu～. A – N -D! As a privilege of reaching level 5, you are allowed to learn one new “Skill”～」

「Did you just say “Skill”?」

「Yes desu～, depending on the person and their level everyone has different “skills” they can acquire, the current Taiyou-chan has a choice from three unique abilities!～. From here you are only allowed to you choose one, kay～」

Similar to the sensation he felt when his status had popped directly into his mind, a string of characters suddenly emerged directly into his brain.

1. Active Skill: Super Armor
2. Passive Skill: Experience Boost
3. Passive Skill: Long distance immunity

As Taiyou is an avid gamer who actually raised many of his characters to the maximum level, the terms stated here were seemingly familiar to him,

additionally, he could imagine what the effects of each “skill” was going to give him.

Normally, following his usual path he would have wanted to optimise the amount of experience points he could obtain and he would without a doubt choose “Experience Boost”. However right now it was completely different.

“Means” to an “end”, he was a man who could clearly distinguish between the two and what he needed right now was a way to get out of the predicament.

「I choose Long range Immunity」

「Yes desu～」

As she said this, Taiyou’s body began to glow in a flash of white like a camera flash……it settled down shortly after.

「Is it done now?」

He gazed at the palm of his own hands, His exterior looks….no it’s not even about his exterior looks, even the person himself was unable to discern exactly what changed within his own body.

「Yes desu～, Taiyou-chan has acquired the skill『Long Distance Immunity』as his first skill～, It is one of the strongest skills capable of making assault rifles become useless against you～」

「I don’t really……Feel anything different about my body though」

Taiyou nodded, and he once again faced towards Sakura.

「I made you wait didn’t I」

「…….What's with you, where did all this confidence suddenly come out from?」

Sakura watched him vigilantly. For Sakura who was unable to see what just occurred as Hera is invisible to her, it was natural did she would feel that something was clearly off with Taiyou.

「My confidence gushed forth?…….Well In a certain sense, I guess you could put it that way」

「You aren't going to tell me, that the more you kiss the stronger you will become right?」

「What if I say that is exactly the case?」

「……」

Sakura took a quick glance at Taiyou, and she deliberately clicked her fingers. (*Pachin*, *Click*)

「…….Oh」

Bullets appeared out of nowhere in particular and flew in Taiyou's direction, it accurately hit both his hands and both his feet in quick succession. Technically if that hit a normal person, they would be left with holes, bleeding limbs and blood flowing/gushing out like a river.

However, this did not happen to Taiyou. In fact the bullets that hit Taiyou made absolutely no sound, it was as if the bullet was sucked up by some cotton wool and it dropped harmlessly towards the ground.

Long Distance Immunity. Taiyou immediately feels the amount of power this ability gave him, and his mind leapt at the endless possibilities this presented to him.

But, he silently kept such words within his own mouth.

「That was impressive, they were able to accurately hit all four of my limbs. They were aiming for my non-vital parts and trying to disable me as quickly/effectively as possible without actually killing me」

「Yo, youu exactly what are you?……..」

「Who knows? It could be that I'm some sort of cheat character」

Taiyou smiles mischievously as he throws out another bluff to Sakura.

He was able to think things through calmly.

Thanks to the ability "Long Distance Immunity" I am able to eliminate Sakura's trump card which is the Sniper squad and make them completely useless. However, if somebody like that white girl appeared with a Katana to cut me, the situation will turn back to a pinch in one swoop.

After all Long Distance Immunity doesn't suddenly make me great at fighting in close quarters combat.

Therefore by throwing this kind of bluff, it forces Sakura's hand to be revealed.

Taiyou recalls the previous events in which she was able to discern his truths from his lies and beat him at his own game of bluffing.

「Ahh, let me just say one thing. Even if I got hit by a nuclear bomb, I could probably get away unscathed」

He stretched his bluff to the utmost, by proclaiming something which sounded completely ridiculous.

「It's alright now～ All of them have left desuyo」

Hera had become used to scouting for Taiyou. Hearing her report, Taiyou was finally able to let go off the tension he accumulated.

「Is that so? Thank you, because of you we are saved」

「Ufufu～」

「However, this time around wasn't leveling up way too easy, all it took was three kisses right? I mean literally it was only three times, you know? If you compare it to the amount of times I had to turn the coin over and over again, which was around 10,000 times, it can't even be a comparison」

「That's not quite true desuyo～, That was not three kisses, it was three different people that you kissed～. Well To be honest, the amount of people who reach level 5 in this world is a really low percentage～. Even if they do reach level 5, they are usually very slow. 90 percent of people usually drop out after

reaching level 5 or they return to trying to gain experience by hitting walls～. Well, they can't really obtain any experience from purely hitting walls so most of them also end up dropping out」

「Ahh…..If you say it like that, it does seem like an incredibly difficult thing to accomplish」

Taiyou smiles wryly, He guessed that means that luck must of been on his side for it to be so easy for him.

「That's right, Taiyou-chan is a really lucky guy desuyo～」

「I'm not really sure what's going on but, we were able to be of some help to Taiyou-san right? 」

Kotone spoke, and the other two girls also joined the conversation.

「Heyy umm, does this mean that if we kiss you even more, we will become even more useful? 」

「If that's the case let's do it! I want to do it more! 」

「It is a shame, every level a different action must be done in order to accumulate the experience desuyo～」

「Is that so……tsk」

「It's alright Koto-chan, even if it's not of any use, we can still kiss whenever we want」

「Or more like we must do it! I want to do it more! 」

「……Hang on a minute?!」

Taiyou had just let all the tension in his body dissipate, and half way through the girls conversation he was just absentmindedly staring into space, however, he soon realized that there was something awfully strange going on. He held his hand out and interrupted the girl's conversations.

「What's wrong?～」

「How are you girls, able to converse normally with Hera?」

Chapter 16: Protecting Loved Ones

Chapter 18: Hayakawa Sisters

Chapter 18

Chapter 17: Kiss all Three!

Chapter 19: The Proper Way to Love Someone

At Taiyou's question, Kotone tilts her head and asks a question in return.

「We aren't allowed to converse normally?」

「Rather than saying you can't, I'm just really surprised is all. Aren't you guys the least bit suspicious or don't you feel this is all really strange? 」

「At first it was a little strange, however」

「Yeah, we saw what happened」

Kotone and Suzune gazed at each other at then nodded as if agreeing upon something.

「After Taiyou-san finished the kiss with Kaza-chan, around that time, her figure suddenly appeared」

「Before that we couldn't see her. Then suddenly the space/airspace cracked. After that we were able to see Hera-chan! Seeing her trying to help you out, we thought……"oh so this is what it's all about"」

Kotone and Suzune starts of the explanation and Kazane finishes off their sentences.

「At first I wasn't able to see Hera-chan, however I was able to feel and understand what Koto-chan and Suzu-chan felt and soon after Hera-chan's name resounded within my head」

「Around the same timing both me and Koto-chan was also able to hear her name within our heads」

「Finally we were convinced of her existence」

「…….Ummm」

Taiyou rubs his temples in contemplation. Their explanations were stopped for the time being.

「So Hera, why is this all happening?」

His thoughts were all getting jumbled and confused, therefore he faced Hera and was hoping she could clarify things out.

「Even for someone like me there are some things that I don't understand desu～」

「Isn't there a time when I can depend on you! Or more like, isn't there more things you don't know, then things you actually comprehend?! I know it's a little late but, where exactly did you come from and for what reason are you even here, seriously」

「I was born in order to meet you～」

「You really like those kinds of cheesy lines don't you!」

「Excuse me, Taiyou-san…….」

When they were able to hear what Hera had said, three people from the back called towards Taiyou in a quiet/mellow voice. When he faced them, the three sisters were teary eyed and looked at him with puppy eyes.

The voice of the three sisters confessed……at the same time.

「「「We were also, born just so we could meet with you」」」

After hearing such a confession from the girls Taiyou's heart shook/faltered. Unlike when a certain "silly" fairy confessed in a cheerful manner, the feelings of the three girls was deep with emotion and this was definitely conveyed to

Taiyou. The confession was filled with so much passion that, he truly believed/was convinced they meant it when they said they were born for the specific purpose of meeting him.

He was at a loss for words as his heart strings were stirred up. Like never before, his heart was beating/raging like it was going to burst out of his chest.

When his reactions were spotted by Hera who was right next to him, she raised her voice and made an objection.

「Ahh～ Taiyou-chan you meanie desu～. Your reactions are completely different to when I said it desu～」

「S, stop being so fussy」

Taiyou responds in a snappish tone. Taiyou's ears were totally hot, and he thought that for sure his face was burning up and completely red.

As if that wasn't enough, the three sisters seemed to pursue him even more aggressively, and they were currently holding their hands in prayer (like a nun praying pose) whilst looking up towards him. They stood still in that pose without saying anything, however their gazes held a different message.

Since a little while ago, two kinds of emotions arose within Taiyou's heart/mind.

The feelings of embarrassment and a craving desire.

Although both feelings were on an even balance, looking at the girl's passionate gazes, the scales completely tipped to one side.

Taiyou took a deep breath in, and reciprocated their intense gaze, he then gave each of the girls another kiss.

He barely grazed their lips, and the kiss itself did not last more than a second. A parched sound of a breath being inhaled resounded in the night sky.

The girls who were kissed were all enraptured. Whilst Taiyou on the other hand had an earnest expression on his face as he asked the girls a question in a serious tone.

「Let me ask you guys one thing. You girls, what do you want to do from now on? I understand that you girls like me, and just now, we each shared a kiss.

……..But from now on, what do you wish to do?」

「Taiyou-chan that's totally unfair, it's boorish/ungentlemanly. In this kind of times, as a man Taiyou-chan should be the one to make the decisions desuyo～」

Hera tried to butt into their conversation, seeing this Taiyou completely disregarded her existence. Right now, he truly believed that the earnest words he stated was necessary between them.

After he exchanged kisses between them he felt it even more, that he could not sense their existence or read their minds and he was an entirely separate individual from them. Furthermore the hearts of the three sisters were connected by the mind.

Taiyou didn't possess such an ability, therefore he could not discern their intentions without just straightforwardly asking them.

As a result, he wanted to hear it directly from their mouths.

The girls did not have an ounce of hesitation…….they did not need to exchange glances between each other like usual, instead they were able to immediately reply Taiyou's question.

「We want to be together with you」

「All three of us do」

「Forever and ever」

「…….I understand」

Taiyou nodded in affirmation, and he gently closed his eyes. As usual he wasn't

able to feel their existence, however, after hearing their words it was satisfactory/sufficient enough for him.

Still having his eyes closed……He had various resolutions made in his mind. And when he opened his eyes, he gave them a bright smile. For some reason the girls seemed to be surprised, but without worrying about such details he spoke to them.

「In that case, I have one last thing that I need to tell you……..It is of the most importance to me」

Hearing such words from him, the girls had a serious look on their faces. Without saying a single word, they expectantly waited for Taiyou's next words.

「Even when we are apart my thoughts will always be with you girls. This I will promise」

「「「Yes!」」」

The three sisters nodded their heads and jumped into Taiyou's arms at the same time.

The three girls often accompanied each other, and even when they were apart they were still connected.

For the girl's this was a natural part of who they were, knowing this Taiyou thought that it would be good if he could build the same level of trust between them.

It was not from obligation, the actions he took were because he truly・・・・・ liked the girls for who they were.

For a while they were embracing each other, until they naturally parted.

It was a sweet atmosphere.

「Then its settled in one go isn't it, congratulations～, with this Taiyou-chan will become even more popular from now on desuyo～」

「Why would it become like that?」

「Let me explain, kay～?」

Hera closes her eyes and raises her index finger, she talks to Taiyou as if he was

a child and she had to make him understand by narrating slowly.

「Rather than a man which no woman wants to hang out with, a guy who is surrounded by women will become more approachable/popular, this is common knowledge desu～. For someone like you who started out without a single girl to interact with, as soon as they obtain their first girlfriend, they will instantly become popular desuyo～」

「…….You are referring to the Caligula Effect? 」

「What is that?」

「It's when somebody is prohibited from doing something, they contrarily want to try it instead」

「『Don't push that button, definitely do not push it』is what you mean desune～」

「That's a completely different context!」

Taiyou decisively repudiates her statement.

「Anyways, the point is, it has a name of its own desune～. As I thought Taiyou-chan is going to become even more popular from now on, only having one girlfriend is enough to make someone popular, let alone Taiyou-chan, who actually has three girlfriends, he's going to become crazily popular desu～」

「No to be honest your logic is way off the mark」

「1+1+1 is equal to 300 nanodesu～ that's 10 times more popular desuyo～」

「Please give me a break already, the more you speak the worst you are starting to sound!」

When Taiyou raised his voice at Hera to retort her ridiculous logic, the three sisters all at once gathered close to his body.

「Taiyou-san if you become more popular will you become more happy?」

「Eh?」

「If you will become happy……We will gladly cooperate with you」

「No no, What exactly are you guys saying here?」

「So tell us what you really think」

He was just staring at the girls who seemed determined to help him become “popular”.

The three eyes he stared at really did seem serious about their proposition. It was the type of eyes that said, if you wished for it, we would even die for you without complaining.

I mean he was glad for their feelings, however, this is not what he intended for them at all.

He looked back at the three girls with a gaze that wouldn’t lose to them in intensity.

「Those kind of things are not something you guys need to think about. Even if you don’t do something like that for me, I will—」

Before being able to finish off his sentence, Suddenly Pechi! Hera slapped him on the head. Although it didn’t hurt him, he was slightly annoyed, at this point in time what could she want anyways.

Although he was glaring at Hera, he noticed that the girls had a look of astonishment on their faces.

「As I thought Taiyou-chan is boorish and a blockhead at that〜」

「Haa? What are you on about? 」

「If you keep on pampering/spoiling them without letting them do anything for you, any woman will become obsolete desuyo〜」

「Well if it’s good woman, they deserve to be spoi—No」

Taiyou shut his own mouth before finishing his sentence.

It was exactly as Hera had said.

Thinking that Hera was right, he cleared his throat and once again began speaking to the three sisters.

「In that case, Please let me become popular」

After he said such things, the girls actually showed him the best smile he’d ever seen plastered on their faces.

Chapter 17: Kiss all Three!

Chapter 19: The Proper Way to Love Someone

Chapter 19

Chapter 18: Hayakawa Sisters

Chapter 20: Although it’s an illegal marriage there should be no problem if there's love right?

Morning: Taiyou gets up and starts to dress himself in his school uniform, Hera was wearing her usual one piece dark green dress (the same as when she first met him) as she called out to him.

「Taiyou-chan Taiyou-chan, I believe you’ve forgotten something desuyo～」

「Did I leave something behind?」

Taiyou looks doubtful as he asks back to Hera whom was buoyantly floating in the air.

「Yes desu～, you’ve forgotten about your jacket desuyo～」

「My jacket? Why do I have to bring such a thing? 」

He tilted his head and stared dubiously at Hera.

The season was currently early within the summer, it’s that time of the year where it will get really hot during the day.

Even if you were to examine the current trends of the people with the highest endurance and perseverance in maintaining a professional outlook AKA the Salary man (Businessman) even they were wearing lightly dressed clothing.

Taiyou was only wearing a uniform with short sleeves and even then he felt that it was really hot and humid, it was to the point that he thought he didn't even need a jacket.

However, Hera insisted him to bring his jacket and she must have had a reason for it.

It turns out that the reason was very important for Taiyou.

「It's because we will be using it in order to accumulate experience points for the next level desuyo～」

「Is that so?」

「It is so ～」

Taiyou nodded, he went into the back of his room, opened his closet and took out the winter clothing jacket that was still in its hanger.

The winter jacket was padded and quite heavy. It was a truly excessive piece of clothing within this time of the season. Not only was it bulky but it was likely to attract the attention of other people in the surroundings if he went out with such a thing, however if this was what it took for him to level up, Taiyou had no hesitation to endure any kind of hardship.

Taiyou took the jumper with him and finally left his room.

The three sisters were waiting outside the hallway of his apartment complex. The girls had an expression of happiness on their faces mixed in with a tinge of shyness/bashfulness. Taiyou gave them a smile in return, and the four of them departed the apartment and headed together to school.

Well let's not forget about the small floating fairy, so in total there was actually four people plus one.

「Well, will you tell me how I'm supposed to use this jacket in order to accumulate experience points?」

「Yes ～. First of all you need to put it on desu～」

「Like this?」

「After you finish wearing it, take it off and drop it on the ground desu～」

「I'm supposed to intentionally drop it?」

「After you let it fall into the ground, you need to pick it up and wear it again, this action needs to be repeated over and over……」

「I remember seeing this in a kung-Fu movie!」

Taiyou stood still, similar to how the famous person in the movie took of the jacket, he threw his jacket down against the ground.

Taiyou suddenly lost his temper. The three sisters stopped their fluttering footsteps and watched over Taiyou and Hera as they conversed.

「More so than leveling this feels more like some sort of training」

「Taiyou-chan, you don't like to train?」

「Watching the movie was cool and all, but doing this is not really one of my hobbies!」

「Is that so? but, but Taiyou-chan even if this looks like some sort of training, I guarantee that this will also raise your experience points desuyo～」

「…….Seriously? 」

「seriously serious～」

「……If that's the case, well I've got no choice but to do it」

「Yes～, Now this is starting to sound like my usual Taiyou-chan～」

Hera had a big smile across her face, the four of them finally started walking again and headed towards school. Because it wasn't really something Taiyou could do whilst walking, he grabbed the jacket and held it in his hands for the time being, he would later find a time in which he could do the action without attracting too much attention.

Suddenly, he notices that the three sisters were keeping silent.

When he was about to ask them what was wrong, he turned around and found out that they had a disheartened expression on their faces. "What's wrong with them?" he tilted his neck in confusion.

「You guys, are you alright? Is there someplace you guys feel unwell? 」

When they heard Taiyou's question the three girls deliberated with each other using their eyes. The representative that was chosen to talk to Taiyou was the smallest of the three Kazane.

「Taiyou-san……」

「Yeah?」

「Taiyou-san you're……..Really close with Hera aren't you? 」

「Well, if you were to ask me whether I hated her more or liked her more…….」

Taiyou glanced at Hera before he made his answer.

「I don't hate her」

Taiyou couldn't be more straightforward and just claim that they had a good relationship with each other.

Even though Hera looked like a miniature character, after all she was a female with a girlish personality. It was at the point in his life where he couldn't admit to having a good relationship with another girl without feeling awkward about it.

In addition, he wasn't really comfortable with the way this conversation was going so he tried to steer the conversation into a more favourable one for him.

「Is there something wrong with our relationship?」

「Does Hera-chan feel the same way……As Taiyou-san? 」

「Heh?」

He didn't really understand what they were trying to say, or what they were trying to imply.

That was because of Hera's miniature size—it made him unable to recognise her as another "female".

If only she was just like the three sisters in relative size, and if she looked more like a human Taiyou would have definitely been able to understand what the sisters were trying to imply here.

However this was not the case and Taiyou was left absolutely clueless as to what they wanted to ask him.

「「「Is your relationship with Hera just like it is with us?」」」

Even after the three sisters said the question right in front of his face, Taiyou didn't immediately understand right away.

Before long though, he finally figured out what they were implying when he looked at their expressions.

Taiyou was in a fluster as he panicked.

「no no no, of course it's not anything like that, or more like that development is impossible to occur between me and Hera, right?」

「「「Is that really so?」」」

「Ahh, just think about it, the size of her body is so small, how am I supposed to make any sort of advances towards her」

「Ah～ You are such a meanie ～. What you just said was blasphemy to me desuyo～」

「no please, can you just keep silent, you are just complicating matters even more」

「「「is that really so……..?」」」

The three sisters looked down and was in deep thought.

They weren't totally convinced with what Taiyou said, that was the kind of expression on their faces. However, Taiyou was cautious and he didn't want to really provoke the situation any further as he thought that it might have the opposite effect if he desperately tried to convince them, therefore he stayed silent. Taiyou waited for the conversation to die down.

However, somebody was trying to thwart his plans……he felt like her actions were similar to performing some sort of unnecessary maintenance.

「I completely understand～ The feeling's you girls have～」

「what do you mean by, feelings?」

「This is all stemming from the fact that Taiyou-chan is really indecisive and non-committal in the relationship desu～, if you proceed to the next stage of the relationship these meagre problems will also go away desuyo～」

「The next stage–」

Taiyou looked doubtful and he inclined his neck in confusion as he stared at both Hera and the three sisters.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane. The girls no longer had expressions of worry, instead they had the face of a maiden who was shy and their cheeks blushed like a cherry blossom.

Putting the pieces together, along with the words "next stage".

Taiyou was able to understand what Hera meant.

In an instant, his face was red as if it caught on fire.

「—-tsu!」

The one being embarrassed was not only him. The two girls Kotone and Suzune covered their own faces and ran towards the school in a dash.

The last girl remaining Kazane was of course also feeling the heat, but she had a determined look on her face as she faced towards Taiyou.

「Anone (the thing is), we share the same feelings」

「Eh? ahh, yeah. You've told me about that previously」

「That's why, I know…….They don't dislike the idea」

Although Kazane was speaking in a roundabout manner, the main point was transmitted to him.

After saying this Kazane immediately took off after her two sisters, whilst staring at the backs of the three sisters Taiyou was just standing there with blank

surprise.

His mind just blanked out.

The next stage——he was already at the stage of being their boyfriend, so the step after that must be…..

In other words——the thing you do after you kiss.

He was fantasising about such things. He instinctively imagined the naked figures of the three sisters whom had the same face but different body sizes.

As a healthy high school boy, Taiyou couldn't help but let his delusions run wild and his brain was becoming more pink coloured by the second.

「You have the face of a lolicon preda–tor」

「Uwaa」

Because he was suddenly talked to, he sprung up in surprise. When he turned around he saw the mysterious white girl he met yesterday, she was also staring the back of the three sisters.

「I said that I can sense the presence of a person with the Lolita com…..plex」 (Note: as usual she talks in broken sentences)

「I'm not a Lolicon !」

「But, you had such lecherous eyes, when you looked at those girls」

「Let me just clarify but Kazane is actually my class mate alright?! Furthermore they are actually a little older than me by a little bit, got it?!」

There's a reason why I was so insistent on getting the message across.

When we first entered the school we were given an attendance number by the educational institution, this number actually decided the order of the students by their age. The three sisters had numbers in the single digits whereas Taiyou had a number that was in the double digits. Using that as a basis he was able to predict that they were around two months older than him.

However, the white girl seemed to have completely ignored his words.

「Even if you are a Lolicon, it's alright. If it's…….now, it won't become a big, iss,ue」

「What are you saying! On the contrary if I truly was a Lolicon that's a really big issue, it would get me hated/criticised by the whole world」

「However, if you were really a Lolicon, That would actually help me a lot. That's because I won't be targeted by you」

「Let me just make one thing clear, you actually look like a Loli more so than the other girls!」

Taiyou immediately retorted her words. Her height was around the same as Suzune however, when Taiyou looked at the size of her chest, he deemed her chest to be even smaller than Kazane. (Note: either Shirokiyami has developed abilities to hide her own breasts or Taiyou is blind :P)

When Taiyou pointed such a thing out to her, the white girl became overly surprised and slowly retreated from him.

「Don't retreat silently!」

「Loli–con, Per-vert」

「Don't say such things whilst retreating!」

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, I'm way smaller than the others, therefore if you want to…With me, it's fine desuyo〜」

Please for goodness sake, you need to stay silent, he looked at her with that kind of glare. He thought that if this conversation was to proceed any further he definitely would be digging himself into a deeper hole. Therefore he forcefully changed the topic of the conversation.

「More importantly, what are you doing here?」

「I got, fired, from my, job」

「Huh?」

「You, what did you do, to, the girl's father?」

Taiyou nodded in understanding, "so that's what this is about".

Last night's events floated within his mind.

Chapter 18: Hayakawa Sisters

Chapter 20: Although it’s an illegal marriage there should be no problem if there's love right?

Chapter 20

Chapter 19: The Proper Way to Love Someone

Chapter 21: What are the triplets trying to tell me?!

Taiyou and the white girl was walking side by side.

Although Taiyou was perfectly normal looking as he wore his school uniform on the way to school, the white girl gave a sense of incompatibility as she had long hair that dropped to the back of her knees and more importantly she was actually wearing a goth-loli dress.

The students who walked past them would show expressions of confusion and marvel at the get up she was wearing.

Perhaps the person herself was accustomed to being looked at in such a way, she just continued to talk to Taiyou without worrying about it at all.

「What did you, do?」

「I used my powers of persuasion, just a bit of it」

「persua–sion?」

Taiyou nodded, he grabbed a little stone pebble that was lying on the floor, and he applied pressure and tightly grasped the stone.

The stone shatters into dust and it spills in between his fingers falling to the ground.

「All I did was tie him up, whilst I fixatedly stared at his nether regions, then all I had to do was show him what I could do, just like I just showed you with the stone」

「Is there……A meaning to those act-ions? 」

「Well you are a girl so you probably don't understand」

Taiyou picked up another pebble and this time around, he stared at a passing schoolboy (at his lower body) and he squished the pebble to dust.

「Hiiii!」*squeal*

The school boy was terrified and he quickly cowered/ran away. He held his hands between his groins and hurriedly ran away to school.

「You may not know this but, to a guy this particular action is considerably effective」

「But, you didn't actually say, anything persuasive」

「Well, don't fret about it too much, as long as it works its fine isn't it? I achieved my objectives and that's good enough」

「As long as you achieve your goals, are you the type of person that…… Doesn't care about the methods? 」

「That's not true」

Taiyou shakes his head.

「On the contrary I place extreme importance in the methods I use…….The best……..I will analyse my options at the time and I will only choose the best and most efficient method to accomplish my goals」

「I under, stand」

For a while the white girl just remained silent.

Taiyou whilst walking side by side with her, gave her a side long glance.

Although her chest was hopelessly small, her looks were unmistakably very beautiful. (Note: again he says her chest is small I may have to fix this later) Although she looks like she is of pure Japanese origin just from her facial features, due to her outfit she wore, she gave off an ambience of a European girl.

She was like a fairy/elf. Taiyou couldn’t help but to admire her looks.

「Want to have a go at, me?」

「no—-」

Taiyou was blushing, he felt as if the thoughts he just had of admiring her beauty was seen right through by her.

「My Mistake」

The white girl clears her throat.

「Wanna……..Fight me, huhh? 」(Note: she’s talking like a yakuza) 「Is that where you’re going with this?!」

「Which one do…..You think suits me better? 」

「Which—」

「So….Wanna come at me? 」

「Why are you switching the way you talk every second? No I don’t want to pick a fight with you, and neither accents are good」

「If you don’t want to, then. Dish out the ca-sh」

「There is no logical connection with what you just said?! Well I understand where you are coming from but! 」

Although Taiyou was shouting out, he actually knew where she was going with this.

After all Taiyou broke her beloved katana sword which was actually worth a

whopping 10 million yen in their last fight.

It's natural that she would chase after him.

Taiyou pondered for a while, however it was impossible・・he definitely couldn't pay her back, but as at same time he couldn't just say no to her.

「…….I can't pay you back right now, if you could please be patient with me that would save me」

「You will re-turn, it?」

As per usual she had her own unique way of pronouncing the words, but it was obvious that the white girl was actually surprised at his willingness to pay her back.

「Aren't you the one asking me to pay for it?」

「That's also true……But I didn't really think you'd actually want to pay me back」

「Wasn't that one of your favourite swords? You even called it "my child"」

「That is, true」

「In that case I've got no choice but to pay you back. Although I'm not sure you will be satisfied by just getting some money as compensation」

Taiyou's thoughts wandered to the save data files he had in his room on the wooden shelf and he thought about how the white girl called her sword "my child", most likely the value she had on her sword is similar to how much he valued those save files in the shelf.

「Don't worry, I still have my other child……..『Reverse-Heaven Reversal』that's why its fine」

Taiyou was pondering what she meant. He thought that she was possibly referring to her other sword the rumoured national treasure.

That was the correct answer, just as he expected, the white girl pulled out a sword with a plain wooden sheath…….from within her skirt, a place he would never expect someone to keep a sword in.

「Where the heck did that sword just come from?!」

「It comes out from here, this is the basic foundational training a beautiful girl swordsman must go through……It took me 15 years to, master it」

「Isn't there things in life to invest that is way more important than that?! Do you even need such a skill?!」

「Indispensable. It's magic so…….It's perfect for a…….party trick/stunt」

「You've even planted a seed in preparation for such a thing?!」

「I want to……..See your seed」

「That is totally irrelevant to the conversation, what exactly are you implying!?」

「The seed……..Of your strength」 (Note: she wants to know the Origin of his strength *i.e.* Hera, but she's asking in a really sexual manner for those of you who don't get it) 「So that's what you were referring to, yes, alright! Your Japanese is totally nonsensical/a mess/ incoherent, you know that?! 」

「It's fine, rather than being a Japanese…….In this day and age, it's more advantageous to be known as a foreigner」

「Do you really think people will mistake you for a foreigner?!」

In actuality Taiyou was not so sure about it himself.

「Anyways, Please let me pay you back, although you may have a replacement for the sword, this and that is a separate issue. However. I am still a student after all, so if you could wait a little bit, I would really appreciate it. Also if you could let me pay you back in smaller instalments that would also help a lot」

「That is…….」

「Hm?」

「Even if it's not money, is that okay with you?」

「You aren't going to tell me to pay it off with my body right?!」

Recently, the amount of people who were conversing with him with ero implications/connotations was becoming a more regular occurrence, therefore he was totally on guard when she mentioned a different method of payment.

「Yeah…..That's what I'm say-ing」

「You are?!」

「But, it's not the kind of ecchi thing you're thinking, about」

「Eh? It's not? 」

「It's not…….Perhaps, you were hoping for, it? 」

「Sh—」

Taiyou's face boiled up like a crab. ……..That's because there was a half-truth in what she said.

「It's regrettable, however…….It's not something, ecchi. If that's what you want, I'll take money」

「If you take money that would make it illegal, you'd get caught」

「It's safe, coincidently, I can take a bath to get rid of……..The evidence–」

「That's a totally old tradition!」

After making his grand retort, Taiyou let out three sighs in succession.

「At any rate, I will definitely pay you back even if it takes me a long time. Is that fine with you? 」

「Yeah, it's good」

He thought she was going to say something weird again, but the response that came back was really meek. "I wonder what's wrong" Taiyou thought such things as he took a quick glance at her face—.

Suddenly, Taiyou's heart beat was throbbing.

So far he had felt indifferent towards the white girl's mouth, however for some reason this time around her lips looked really soft.

He thought that her lips was extremely cute and beautiful.

……He had a sudden impulse of wanting to embrace her.

As if she knew what he was thinking, the white girl stopped walking, she came right besides Taiyou, whom was also currently just standing still.

She extended her pure-white slender hand towards Taiyou's to feel his chest.

「You…….Are burning, up….aren't you? 」

When he relaxed his guard, she blew his mind with words that were even more obscure than before.

The three sisters who headed off towards school earlier than Taiyou did not go to class, instead they went straight up the stairs and into the rooftop. Because they were slightly flustered by the previous event, they were a little confused as to what kind of expression they should have when they next met Taiyou.

Under the blue sky, the three sisters were facing each other. Even though they've spent 16 long years in each other's company, this was the first time their faces had been so crimson red.

「Koto-chan, Kaza-chan. The next stage, what exactly is the next stage? 」(Suzu speaking) 「Don't ask us things you already know! Or more like stop thinking such strange thoughts, even I'm starting to get effected and my hearts beating so fast!」(Kotone speaking) 「If we are talking about that, Suzu-chan is also thinking about ecchi thoughts」(Kazane speaking) 「No I'm not, Kaza-chan is the one thinking the most lewdest thoughts」(Suzu speaking) 「It's true, this time around, the one thinking the lewdest thoughts is Kaza-chan」(Kotone Speaking) 「Uuuu…….」(Kazane speaking)

Kazane who was getting cornered by both her sisters could only wince.

Although she looked nothing like a high school girl, and more like a primary school girl, out of the three sisters, she was the one with the most perverted thoughts. Although all three girls were fantasising about Taiyou, Kazane was having wild delusions as to the things he would do to her "young body".

In the end, the difference was the degree of imaginations. Right now though the three sisters were in their own fantasy world, and they were expectant on what came after.

Suddenly, Kotone remembered something.

「Hey guys, when its time……. To do it with him, what should we do? 」

Suzune and Kazane were both taken aback at Kotone's words.

Would they simultaneously do it together? Or would the three sisters receive it

separately? ……Or, maybe they could just become one person‥‥‥and do it together?

「Can’t we, catch him somehow……..?」

Kazane mumbled such things and Suzune and Kotone became silent.

When they were pondering what to do, the door in the rooftop made a noise and someone opened it.

When they turned around, a certain classmate with a pony tail glared at them as she made her entrance.

☆2015/04/07 Post Script☆ Memo written about the progress at the 20th chapter【**Level**】5

【Main Abilities】

Strength: 30

Charm 65535

Popularity: 0

Skill: Long Distance Immunity

【His Valuable Possessions】

Debt of around 10 million yen

A broken smart phone

One room apartment

An annoying fairy

【Brides】

Still none

【Acquaintances】

Hayakawa Kotone, Suzune and Kazane

Junishima Sakura

White Girl

【People who can see Hera】

Hayakawa Kotone, Suzune and Kazane

[Chapter 19: The Proper Way to Love Someone]

[Chapter 21: What are the triplets trying to tell me?!]

Chapter 21

Chapter 20: Although it’s an illegal marriage there should be no problem if there's love right?

Chapter 22: Harem Wild Goose Chase

「Miyagi-san?」

The classmate whom appeared out of the half broken iron door was Miyagi Aoba. There was a peculiar accessory attached to her long pony tail as it swayed about, she walked at a brisk pace towards the three sisters with a sour look on her face.

She came close enough so that the distance could be covered by extending ones hands, she stopped in place and began to speak.

「I will get right to the point, are the rumors about you guys going out with Natsuno-kun, the truth?」

Whilst pressing for details in regards to the situation, Aoba’s stern expression leaves the three sisters slightly shocked. Aoba’s expression was as if she was looking at her mortal enemies, and it made Kotone flinch when she saw such a gaze.

「So what is the verdict? Or is it that you can’t answer me? 」

Aoba continued her intense interrogation. The three sisters exchanged glances with one another and after deliberating amongst themselves, Kotone stepped

forward to represent their thoughts.

「That's right, What has it got to do with you?」

「Are you girls, sane? Isn't it strange for three girls to be going for one man? 」

「Are you……」

「What?」

「Are you, asking this for our own『Wellbeing as a third party』or is it for you own personal reasons?」

Kotone asked a question in return to Aoba's sharp questioning. At first the sisters were surprised, but when they detected animosity towards Taiyou, they became defensive.

The scene was like a feud existed between Aoba and the three sisters.

「What do you mean?」

「The meaning is that we want to know the reason as to why you are trying to corner/blame us」

「Do you have good intentions? Or are they filled with malice」

「If you are trying to help us, then we have had more than enough, thank you very much」

Although they were just going to let Kotone do all the talking, Suzune and Kazane couldn't hold it any longer and joined into the conversation.

「What is the meaning of this?」

「We understand your point, you want to tell us that one man should only go out with one woman, and anything beyond that is completely inappropriate. This is your point, right? 」

「In this case, let us ask you a question in return 」

「As triplets whom possess the same personality and disposition, if all three of us meet one person whom we fell in love with, what should we do?」

「Uuuu……」

Aoba flinched as she heard them keep talking, and the confidence/vigor she

displayed earlier was all but gone.

「That is……Shouldn't you think of something…….and make a decision……」

「We did, we thought it through and made a decision」

「Yeah, We decided that all three of us would go out with him」

「If by some chance we break it off, all three of us will separate with him」

Aoba was at a loss for words, she had a face which said that she didn't expect that the three sisters would answer in such a manner.

Nevertheless that surprised expression only lasted for a fleeting moment, and her face was soon dyed with anger.

「I understand, so you think that I am just a bother right?!」

After leaving such a remark, Aoba departed from the rooftop.

「What is wrong with that person, I wonder?」

「Who knows…….She seems quite different from the person she was before」

「Yeah, I don't think she was out here to give us friendly advice, and more like it was for her own personal benefit/reasons」

「Maybe it's because she was cheated on by someone before?」

「Ahh……..That's probably it」

「You think? Well if that's the case I kind of understand. However, even so if she's using that as an excuse to pressure us I'd rather not hear it」

「Well, still it's better than hearing sales talk from a telemarketer」

Kotone said such things, and the other two nodded their heads saying "yeah, true".

「Is this where you guys where?」

Soon after Aoba had just departed, Taiyou actually showed his appearance in the entrance of the rooftop.

The boy they loved slowly walked towards them.

「Taiyou-san…..Eh? 」

「That is, is there something wrong?」

「Your cheeks, your cheeks!」

At the beginning when they first saw him the three sisters let out a beaming smile, however after looking at his cheeks…….which were really red, they began to panic and ran towards him. The three people gathered to one side and gazed at his cheeks which were faintly swollen.

「Ahh, I met Miyagi-san just a moment ago , but for some reason she gave me a slap on the cheek when I met her.」

「That girl is……..」

「Wait, I will make an objection for you」

「More like she deserves to be slapped back. Twice the amount……no three times the amount」 (Note: these girls are scary (kowaidesuu) 「Guys, wait a moment」

Three sisters were trying to go out of the rooftop entrance in order to chase after Miyagi, but Taiyou calmly detained them.

「You don't have to do something like that」

「However…….」

「It's really ok, truly. When she slapped me on the face she seemed like she was crying, moreover she must have her own circumstances for doing something like that, right? 」

「「「No matter her reason for doing such a thing, we can't accept it!」」」

The sisters all talked in the same exact moment in a loud voice.

Even if Taiyou himself was seemingly unperturbed by getting slapped, the girls could not consent to such an action taken against him and they had a displeased expression on their face.

「It's fine」

He repeated the same words, with a calm smile whilst watching the girls with a confident gaze. When the three girls looked into his eyes they could not help but to lose their anger as it withered away into nothingness.

For a while, Taiyou and the three sisters just looked into each other's eyes whilst on the rooftop.

Suddenly, Taiyou opened his mouth to talk.

「Hmm, may I embrace you—」

「「「Yes!」」」

The start of the school bell resounded and was heard from a long distance, an early summer breeze brushed gently over their bodies as they stood on the rooftop.

Around this time students were probably giving it their all to study within the classroom, or they may be a couple of those students who would drift off to sleep in the middle of class.

Taiyou was different, he was squatting on the floor with his back entrusted to the rooftop fence as three girls are embraced closely in his arms. The triplets as if they became a single being…….leapt at the same time into his arms whilst embracing him at the same time.

They were the prominent beautiful triplets, and they were skipping class going to the rooftop and cuddling Taiyou. The fence he was leaning on, as if telling them "enough is enough" was making creaking sounds as they were putting their whole weight on it.

「Hey guys, is my body temperature high?」

Taiyou opens his mouth and asked the three sisters a question.

「Taiyou-san's body temperature?」

「I think that it is normal」

「Yeah, its normal…..Ah, but」

「But?」

「The warmth is……..A little different」

「Yeah, when you are holding us like this…….It feels really warm」

「Rather its quite hot」

After finishing their sentences, the three sisters all raised their gazes and looked at Taiyou's face.

Why are you asking us such things? That's the kind of face they had.

「A little while ago someone said that to me. They said that my body temperature is really high」

The three sisters stared at each other after hearing what Taiyou said.

「Was it a girl who said it?」

「Ahh, how did you know?」

「That's cause」

Kotone was speaking and the three sisters had a wry smile on their faces.

「Taiyou-san you have the same face as the time when you first met us」

「A face that was kind of troubled and the kind of face that said "what should I do"」

「However at the same time it's a slightly happy face」

「Uuu…….」

Taiyou finds himself at a loss for words. He didn't really know what to think of it himself, and what the girls told him was quite vague.

However, he was beginning to be convinced.

Although most of the things the white girl said was mysterious, maybe he really did have a high body temperature.

「Do you like this person?」

「No, I mean that is—」

「Please don't put us in the equation」

「Yeah, just think purely using your true feelings, whether you like this person or not」

「That is…..」

Just like the three sisters told him to do, Taiyou began to think about the white girl in his mind.

Her hair which was long enough to reach the back of her knees, looks which were like a pure Japanese girl, white transparent skin. In addition as if she was hiding her beautiful white skin, she wore a black lace dress.

He thought long and hard as to exactly what he thought of her…. however.

「Ah……..」

「What went wrong?」

「I……Haven't got a hold of her name」

Taiyou finally realized such a thing.

After noticing this, he tried to recall in great detail the first time they met and the events which took place.

He was first overwhelmed with her killing intent, then she wanted to stab him, then he broke her sword.

Then he met her again, she demanded payment, and she touched his face.

After piling up the episodes together, he understood that she was not an ordinary person, she was an expert in using the sword and was a little strange in her ways of speaking, when he thought about it again, she never really introduced herself and he never really asked for her name either.

「What have you done…….」

「You don't know the other party's name」

「And even then you were still anxious about her, right?」

「It's the kind of situation where you ride on the same train with her to school

but never get the courage to approach her, right?」

The three sisters continued to speculate the situation.

Even though they were currently being held in his arms, the three sisters were seemingly able to talk enjoyably about another woman that he was thinking about.

They were not angry or discouraged, more so than that it would seem like they were having fun whilst discussing such an issue.

It felt like, they were children discussing some sort of school trip for tomorrow.

This made Taiyou perplexed.

「Hey guys, aren't you angry?」

「「「Angry?」」」

「I mean……The fact that I'm thinking about another girl, aren't you guys bothered? 」

To Taiyou's question, the three girls smiled like they were prepared for the question.

How can they laugh in such a carefree manner, this made Taiyou perplexed/confused.

「Umm, You didn't hear our previous exchange with each other so you probably would think like this」

「Koto-chan that's not really correct, even if he heard our conversation, at most he would probably understand half of what we said」

「I guess, since we were mainly communicating using our thoughts」

Hearing the three girls talk amongst themselves, Taiyou became even more confused.

If he didn't hear their conversation he would have no idea, and even if he did listen to what they were saying, he probably couldn't catch the complete meaning. Because he wasn't there when they conversed he was becoming more clueless.

Seeing such a Taiyou, the three sisters slipped out of his arms with a smile on

their faces.

「「「It was our, childhood dream to make a harem!」」」

They all talked at the same wavelength, without faltering in the slightest as they declared their ambitions.

Chapter 20: Although it’s an illegal marriage there should be no problem if there's love right?

Chapter 22: Harem Wild Goose Chase

Chapter 22

Chapter 21: What are the triplets trying to tell me?!

Chapter 23: Tadah!

Taiyou was alone in the rooftop, and he was trying to gather experience.

He was holding the jacket that Hera specifically told him to bring before he left the house.

He wore the jacket, took it off, dropped it on the floor and picked it up.

Additionally he put it on, took it off again, subsequently drops it and as expected he picks it up again.

To a person whom didn't really know what the heck was going on, if they saw his actions, they would clearly think he went nuts, he repeated such a tedious action innocently and continuously.

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, it's about to be noon desuyo～」

「Ahh, I know」

Pasa, Syuru, Pasa. (Sound of clothes rustling)

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, your experience points have exceeded 10% desuyo～」

「Ahh, I know」

Pasa, Syuru, Pasa. (Sound of him taking off clothes etc.)

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan The truth is I am a virgin desuyo～」

「Ahh, I know」

Pasa, Syuru, Pasa.

「This is a serious issue desu……What should I do so he stops ignoring me desu?」

Hera seems to be rambling on about something in the background, however none of the contents/specifics of what she said actually got into Taiyou's head.

This is because, his head was currently filled with the conversation he just had with the three sisters.

—-It was part of their childhood dreams, to create a harem.

It was a sentence which truly blew his mind away.

The girls didn't speak as if they were forced to say such things, more like it was as if they were honestly enjoying the conversation and speaking in high spirits. Although many would say that women have a naturally talent in acting since they were born, the three sisters were by no means performing an act, they were passionately discussing how they could achieve their dreams.

They seriously wanted to create a harem, moreover it was not a reverse harem, it was the kind of harem that was made up of only one man.

If the person saying such things were a guy, that would be fine. Or even if the person that was saying it was an ero elder-sister type character with an eye patch, he could understand it. (Note: **I think it's referring to this eye patch onee-san**)

However, because it was the three sisters who said it, it exceeded the boundaries of his comprehension.

In other words, right now Taiyou was baffled.

「Uwaa, Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, it would seem that there is someone aiming at you with a sniper from a long distance desuyo～!」

He was able to understand a little of last night's events.

They were identical triples. They are people whom share the same genes, another way to put it is they are like SF clones. (Note: SF = science fiction)

Therefore, if they liked the same person……There would be no other choice but to go out with that person at the same time.

He could understand their logic up to this far.

「You are being shot at! Taiyou-chan someone is shooting you desuyo! They are firing at your head in rapid succession desuyo! Eh, why are you still keeping your cool!?」

But, this was at best the most he could deduce from listening to the three sisters talk.

In Taiyou's heart, he could not understand the reasoning behind the girls wanting to create a harem for him. When he asked them, for an explanation, all the girls did was smile at him without saying anything as they returned to the school building.

And Taiyou whom was left behind to ponder, worried endlessly whilst repeating his tedious work.

「Oh that must be it! Taiyou-chan has the long range immunity skill desu! Even if a nuclear missile was launched at him or even if an Ebola virus was thrown at him, he wouldn't even falter, he has the ultimate skill desu～. It can't be helped, then I shall do this desu～!」

「Haa, truthfully this is what he deserves for ignoring me!」

Suddenly, the lower half of his body……specifically, intense pain ran though his crotch area.

Pain so intense it felt like his internal organs were being hit directly. Taiyou suppresses his hands between his groins and crouched to the ground.

With cold sweat dripping down his face and his eyes tearing up slightly he looked up towards Hera. There, he saw Hera's face which was elated/proud.

「Y, you……Wha……」

「Finally you noticed me desu～, Mouu, you can't drift off into space whilst I am talking with you desuyo～」

「Still…….What are you…….」?

「Taiyou-chan has long range immunity that's why, There was no other choice but to kick you desuyo～. Also, you aren't allowed to do that, ignoring people whom has been talking with you for a long time～」

「In order for me to notice……You, couldn't you have just slapped me in the cheeks…..?」

He held his groins, whilst fighting against the intense/acute pain to make a complaint to Hera.

「Next time I shall do that then desu～」

Hera says this without being shy.

「Please…….Don't forget」

Suddenly, Taiyou notices something rolling in front of his eyes. To him it looked like a pile of crushed metal, Taiyou had never seen such a thing before.

Moreover when he reached out to get it…

「That's a rifle sniper bullet desu, Taiyou-chan was being sniped desuyo～」

「…….Ha? 」

「Like-I-Said-, you were being sniped desu. Looking at the direction it's coming from, I think it's probably from that building over there? 」

「I was being sniped? In that case why…….」

Taiyou was going to finish his sentence but then he became startled. He remembered that he possessed the skill「Long Distance Immunity」.

As he was enduring the agonizing pain between his groins, he slowly stood back up and the bullet was taken into his hands.

「Did it hit me?」

「It was a beautiful headshot desu～」

Listening to Hera's words, he instinctively rubbed his forehead. However, he felt no pain around his head nor was there even a trace/mark of him being shot at.

He was completely and utterly saved by his skill.

Taiyou stood at his full height. In normal circumstances a person who hide and crouch down, however he was able to confirm that no one was approaching the roof top or that any short distance attacks were coming at him, therefore he boldly stood up.

And he stared into the direction where Hera said the bullet came from.

「Is it there?」

In the direction he was looking at there was a particularly tall building. It was a 50 story building called the twin building, it stood at 200 meters tall and was one of the more famous/popular places in town.

Judging from the situation and the direction of the bullet, he deducted that the sniper was likely positioned on top of the building.

And, towards the opponent who shot at him—.

「It was probably……..Junishima Sakura's thugs, right? 」

「Yes～」

「Are the girls okay?」

「They are fine desu, they are attending class as per usual desuyo～」

He couldn't really explain the logic behind it but, right after Taiyou shared a kiss with the three sisters, the girls became able to see Hera.

Not only that, even if they were apart, Hera has become able to have a sense/feel if they were to be in any danger. And after hearing that they were safe

and sound, Taiyou could calm down his heart for the time being.

「Nevertheless, I know that I've become a hindrance towards their objectives…….But I would have never thought they would be aiming for my life」

「Back then, they were only aiming for your hands and feet desune～」

「Ahh…….Now then, how should we handle this」

Taiyou was thinking.

Whilst he in the middle of thinking, something seemed to hit his forehead as it dropped harmlessly to the ground.

When he gripped it using his hands, it was the same bullet which was shot at him like a little while ago.

「I understand, With my Long distance immunity, let alone feeling any pain, there isn't even any damage. It totally bends the current laws of physics and erases it……..I wonder if it works the same way against bombs? Or what about radiation emission or flame throwers, will they also be ineffective towards me? 」

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, You should do your analysis of your abilities later desuyo～」

「Ahh, that's true」

Once again, he looked towards the direction of the sniper and stared at the building.

That being said, he didn't really have any brilliant ideas up his sleeves.

The things he had was his physical strength which was able to crush concrete walls like they were tofu, and his strongest defensive skill which could make him immune to any long distance attacks.

If all he had to do was protect himself, then he could bluff his way and scare them off, however if he had to protect the three sisters, and make his opponents give up, this was something he was not yet able to do with his current abilities.

「Hey, If I continue doing this, will I be able to gain a new skill?」

He held the jumper/jacket and asked Hera.

「No you won't desu～, skills can only be obtained in multiples of five

desuyo～」

「Although it's easy to understand…..But is that how it is?」

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, I have a good idea desu～」

「…….For now I guess I'll listen to it, what is it?」

「Slip into their headquarters, Become matchless and KAIMETSU desuyo～」(Note: KAIMETSU is annihilate/destroy, she's telling him to destroy their base of operations)

「As if I could do that?! If I make a mistake, I could be knocked out in a single punch, and killed right on the spot you know?!」

Even now his groins was still pulsating and he was still in a lot of pain.

Living with the existence known as Hera for these past couple of days, he was able to figure out that her physical strength did not match how small her appearance was. Furthermore, receiving such a blow from her, he was able to feel such an intense amount of pain and this reinforced the belief that his short distance fighting capabilities weren't the best. If he were to take a big risk and try to challenge their headquarters, he could already predict that he would swiftly be surrounded and defeated.

「It's impossible to try and fight them head on, also persuading them is…..」

「The laws of persuasion is ineffective?」

「What you just said has nothing to do with battle you know?! Well, persuading those using words is useless, and I don't really know where their base is located, neither do I have the means to search for such information」

「Eh? If you want to search for their base I have a way desuyo～?」

Hera looked vacant and she spoke those words as if it was the most natural thing in the world.

「What do you mean?」

「Yadanaa～(oh dear), Taiyou-chan it's still 10000 years to 2000 years too early for you to become senile desuyo～?」

「Please speak in a time range where it actually applies to humans!……No

besides that, you said that you have a way? What could it be? 」

「Yes ～, we can just depend on that child. The black child」

「Muu…..」

Listening to Hera, Taiyou had a doubtful look across his face.

[Chapter 21: What are the triplets trying to tell me?!]

[Chapter 23: Tadah!]

Chapter 23

Chapter 22: Harem Wild Goose Chase

Chapter 24: When you undress it's amazing (I couldn't say it was amazing)

「This……Must I really do something like this? 」

Taiyou grabbed the『Contact Details Memo』of the white girl out of his pocket whilst alternating looks between the piece of paper and Hera. Taiyou had a sour expression on his face.

「Yes～, If you call out to her as per the instructions written on that piece of paper, no matter when or where she is, that black child will come running towards you」

「Iya, I know she said such things but……..This kind of thing is just….」

「Give up desu～, Taiyou-chan is the one at fault for leaving his smart phone broken and not getting a new one desu～」

「uuuuu……..」

Taiyou was at a loss for words, and he understood how powerless he was right now.

He looked towards what was written on the Memo and had to think for a while.

This『Contact Details Memo』was currently, his only shot at being able to contact the white girl and depend on her much needed help」

If he wanted to accomplish his objectives this was probably the most efficient way… however there was something he needed to do to get her to come here.

「I guess it can't be helped…..I've got no choice but to do it」

Taiyou steels himself, he remember the contents of the memo and put it away into his pocket.

And then he stood shoulder width apart, and took a deep breath in—-.

「Yo, Yo, Yoyo. Yo, Yo, Yoyo. Your mother has a protruding navel, your father is a pop-eyed goldfish. Heheyy ei ei, Hoho ho〜, Hehei ei, Hoho Ho〜」

As recorded exactly in the memo, Taiyou burst into a dance whilst singing out.

「……」

「……」

Hyuuuuoooooo. (Sound of the wind passing by speechlessly) An uncharacteristically cold wind passes by the rooftop in this summer season.

「This ain't working at all is it?!」

Without thinking he switched to talking in a Kansai Dialect.

「how strange desune〜 it didn't seem like she was telling us a lie desu〜」

「In the first place, will someone really appear just because of saying these things? And what is wrong with this dance? Is she trying to make me summon some sort of evil god? 」

「Evil spirits……Disperse, begon-e」

「Uwaa!」

「Ohh, it's amazing desu, I didn't even feel her approach desu〜」

Taiyou was completely caught off guard, Hera who was showing her admiration.

The voice was heard from the other side of the door. He didn't really know when she arrived but the white girl was already standing on the rooftop high

fence.

She was standing on her tiptoes in a narrow footing as the wind blew her long white hair and made it flutter.

This is indeed‥‥an extravagant way to appear。

「—tsu!」

Taiyou turned his eyes away.

The girl was standing above him on the fence. She was wearing a skirt lace dress and a ring garter belt that barely covered her hips, that area between the top of her thighs and her knees was exposed generously.

Because she was standing, Taiyou panicked and averted his eyes as it seemed that he would be able to look at her most interior parts otherwise.

「What's, wrong?」

「N, no, it's nothing. More importantly, I didn't expect you to actually appear」

「Physical Limits」

「Eh?」

「It is because, there is, distance?」

「No, I mean you made me do such a weird summoning ritual, you might as well use a teleportation/warp skill and appear instantly」

「That is, not yet, possible」

「Not yet?!」

「If I train for three hours a day…….For a period of three years…….it's a possibility」

「Ohh～, It's the Brazen Cat Formula desune～」(Note: Hera actually says the 機械猫方式 which literally translates to Machine Cat Method. I believe this is a reference to "Doraemon" as the manga was originally conceived by Hiroshi Fujimoto following a series of "three" events feel free to correct me if I'm wrong :D) In the other direction‥‥Hera talked as if she could relate to what was just said and was filled with admiration。Naturally the white girl couldn't hear what Hera said so she didn't actually respond back.

Because the small talk seemed to have no end he stopped it there, and Taiyou wanted to get down to business.

「The truth is, my main reason for calling you here is because I have something important to ask of you」

「Wh-at, is it?」

The white girl adorably tilts her head and Taiyou began to explain the gist of the story.

The fact that he had just been sniped a few moments ago, that he suspected it was Junishima's group who targeted him, and in order for him to do something about it, he wanted to discover their base of operations.

He summed up such things and explained it to the white girl.

「I understand」

「And, I thought that you whom, once worked with them would know something?」

「You want me to, betray…..Them? 」

「Uu」

「Even though I may look like this……..I am a pr-o. If I betray someone after taking on a contract……It becomes a trust is-sue」

「……」

Her way of talking was still peculiar, but her eyes were resolute.

Consequently, Taiyou falls silent. He couldn't really understand how she was actually feeling, however he could understand the reasoning behind her words.

「Is that so, well in that case I won't insist any longer—」

「However, my contract/request has been, cut」

「Are you serious?!」

It was like he dropped to hell and he saw a spiders thread that could help pull him out of the abyss, he immediately grabbed at it.

「That is, if I receive a new mission」

「In that case I'll do it, Please lend me your power」

「Is that alright? I am, a really expensive woman, you know? 」

「Please restrain yourself when making such a statement! Wait, what I meant to say is, exactly how expensive……..are we talking about here? 」(Note: Taiyou is complaining to the double meaning of "Expensive Woman" and tells her to be mindful of her words) Taiyou was really timid as he asked her this question.

「Hourly wage……..41667……..Yen」

「That's expensive! Or more like what's with that incomplete figure?!」

「Daily Wage, is one million yen, that's why……」(Note: 41667 x 24 = 1,000,008)
「Is that how is it and is that the standard wage? Or is that actually really cheap? 」

「That is……..It depends on each situation. It's a really, specialized……line of work. Moreover, the supply is low, so it follows the market theory」

「I understand」

「That's why, I , overcharged, you」

「You are overcharging me?!」

「I'm exhilarated」

「I can tell!」

Taiyou keeps getting mind blown.

He didn't really know how to react, her expression was completely blank and he did not know if she was making fun of him or if she was being serious. When

speaking to her, Taiyou felt that the conversation always seemed to go in a confusing manner and that the pace was in disarray.

Normally Taiyou is a coolheaded person whom doesn't easily get affected by others and would be able to respond calmly, however every time he talked with this girl, he would get sucked into her pace and would inevitably raise his voice.

Even now, that is exactly what happened. Taiyou recited in his own mind "calm down, calm down, me".

「What should we do Taiyou-chan, should we ask for her help desuka?」

The white girl couldn't see Hera, and Hera was asking for Taiyou's decision.

Taiyou thought for a little…….However, in reality he didn't really have any other choices.

Even though right now, the girls haven't been captured by the "devils hands".

However, when he thought about the special characteristics the girls had, there was no way that Sakura's group would ever let them go and he understood that one day, things may go awry if he didn't solve the problem at its roots.

Therefore, before his opponent's made a plan and came at him, he thought it would be better to go to them unexpectedly and get rid of them in one fell swoop.

「I beg of you, Please lend me your strength」

The view of the city could be seen from the school rooftop, on the other side of the Meguro River there was a town. It was the town known as Ohashi.

Taiyou slipped out of school, and both he and the white girl were walking on the bridge towards Ohashi.

「And this place we are going is it their base of operations?」

「rather than base…….It's more like a Daimyos Mansion…..」

「Daimyo's Mansion?」

Taiyou was slightly dubious when he heard such an old-fashioned term come out.

「Yeah, It's the Junishima, Feudal Lord Mansion」

「What is that?」

「If I explain……It will take too long. Go look it up on the, internet」

「…….I understand」

Taiyou decided that he would find out more about it once he repaired his smart phone. The fact that the white girl suggested him to do such a thing, must mean that the information is readily available on the net, right?

「So Junishima's group is located at that place?」

「Most likely……In this city, it is their headquarters」

「I see」

「More important, by going there……..What do you plan to accomplish? 」

「…….How, strong are you exactly? 」

「That's not fair, you asked a question to my question」

「I want to understand your capabilities as much as possible, for the purpose of realistically implementing my plans」

Hearing Taiyou's words the white girl seemed to be convinced as she murmured "is that so?" she had a thoughtful look on her face.

「My battle power is…….139」

「I don't really understand what that standard means!」

「For somebody garbage……The standard is a, 5」

「So that's the standard?! ——doesn't that mean you are ridiculously strong?!」

「She's not just a lewd grandpa desune～」(Note: Hera is referring to the fact that she always unintentionally (or is it intentionally?) makes dirty jokes) Hera whom was floating buoyantly on the side of the two people made her own remark.

「Your words, how much of it can I trust?」

「If you believe in me……That would help me, a lot」

「So you are asking me to believe in you, well alright. We shall go with the assumption that it’s true……Oh yeah, I have one last thing to ask」

Taiyou clapped his hands together. He was on the brink of forgetting something important, luckily he recalled it.

「Please tell me your name」

He had forgotten to ask her many times before, and he finally asked for her name. The girl was surprised for a moment and then she turned her face away.

「I’m not going……To tell you」

Chapter 22: Harem Wild Goose Chase

Chapter 24: When you undress it's amazing (I couldn't say it was amazing)

Chapter 24

Chapter 23: Tadah!

Chapter 25: Bird in a Cradle

Taiyou was staring blankly.

Until now he hadn't asked for her name so it couldn't be helped, however, now that he specifically asked for her name, why was it that she didn't want to tell him?

「You aren't going to tell me?」

「A long time ago……Girls. Only told someone their names……during the night of their wedding」

「Ahh, I suppose there was a period in time where a woman's name wasn't called out so frivolous/thoughtlessly. Because of that though, there were plenty of famous people whose names did not go down in history」

「Hideyoshi's wife…….For example? 」

「That's one of the prime examples. By the way, what do you prefer to call her? 」

「Nene…….-chan」 (TL: **Here is a cute pic of Hideyoshi's Waifu: Nene**) 「You're adding a -chan to the end of her name? Well I also prefer Nene, it has a really

cute/lovely ring to it after all」

「I am a firm believer of the One name desuyo～」(TL: Nene was also known as One, Nemoji and Kōdai-in) Hera tried to join in the tense conversation, but as it stood, the white girl couldn't see her and Taiyou was ignoring her.

「Well no matter the case, calling your name as "you" all the time is awkward, so if you have something else you would preferred to be called please let me know」

With that being said, the white girl thought for a little while.

「In that case……Call me by,『Oi』」

「Oi Kora!」(TL: Hey! / Interjection meant to scold or reprove someone, or can also mean "dear")「Yes, my darl-ling……?」(TL: Anata can mean "you" or in this case, "dear" (what a wife calls a husband).

「That's not the meaning I was referring to! I wasn't calling you "dear"! So are you really fine with just being called "you"? 」

After this was said, the white girl thought for even longer.

「Yeah……It may have been too rash, of me. Well…….Call me,『Shirokiyami』

This time she finally answered……It was the kind of name an adolescent person would come up with when they thought they heard something cool. For her whom had this peculiar way of speaking, she was actually able to pronounce this name relatively well.

At least, she seemed accustomed to saying this name, this I could tell.

「Shirokiyami–…….Well I suppose I understand」(TL: Shirokiyami = the white dark) Taiyou had a bittersweet smile.

Indeed, she had really pale white skin which didn't get enough sunlight, contrasted with her jet black lace dress and lacquer black over knee socks. Even the ring garter belt that ties it all together is a black laced colored one.

Shirokiyami, regardless of the fact that she made this name up or not, the name definitely suits how she displays her figure/appearance.

「That is……..My code name. One portion…….of the name is really fam-ous,

more so than my real name」

「Having a code name or part of a code name, asking the origins of such a name is quite a scary thing」

Taiyou shrugs his shoulders and lets out a wry smile.

The fact that she lives an abnormal life is something that he can no longer doubt, this he experienced firsthand.

No, from the first moment he met her, it's safe to say he already knew this fact.

Human beings all have a general atmosphere/feeling about them, from the way they interact with the environment and their natural actions. From the first moment Taiyou had met her she was able to let out an extreme killing intent…….For an instant it could wrap around your whole body and suffocate your existence, it was the kind of thing that a normal human being could not put out.

If words like「The Underground Community」or「The Underworld」were to come out of her mouth, Taiyou would not be least bit surprised.

「I understand, then from now on that's what I will refer to you by」

「It will also be fine, if you'd like to call me, Yami-chan」

「I'm afraid god will get angry if I do that so I will pass on that」

「Or you can refer to me as something that sounds similar, to, it」

As she said this, Shirokiyami's face was blushing pink.

「I'm not going to do it! I ain't going to call you by Cunni four times in a row」(TL: クニ I think this is referring to Cun-nil-lingus) Whilst continuing their incoherent conversations the two people head over to Hirose Ohashi.

When they first met they were meeting as enemies, however now, such a thing cannot be seen at all when you looked at them. She lacks emotional ups and downs, In addition, her words are usually interposed with jokes so it was really hard to get the real meaning/intent. However this didn't really make Taiyou think less of her.

He was able to keep composed most of the time, however, sometimes the things she said was enough to get his heart throbbing really fast.

Therefore, although the conversations he had with her were usually superficial, and Taiyou would often think that it was ridiculous to the point of absurdity, deep inside/secretly, Taiyou was actually having a lot of fun.

Just like that, they conversed on their way to Hiroshise Ohashi, as they set foot on the upscale residential area in Seikasono Town. They arrived at an area where Taiyou rarely visited, as Shirokiyami was continuing to guide his path.

「We are about to……arrive」

「Is that so?」

At her words, Taiyou suddenly began to feel a little tense/nervous.

「Let me confirm one last time. You really have a power level of 139 and is as strong as the Turtle Grandpa, is this right?」(TL: as previously contributed by Luan (Thanks Luan), the Turtle Grandpa is most definitely referring to Master Roshi from DBZ ahahahha~)「Approximately……Around, there」

「I understand. Next is about me……」

Taiyou was again, analyzing the information of his own strengths within his own head. The voice of Shirokiyami interrupts him.

「Your……Power level, is unknown. You are much stronger, than you look」

Taiyou just let out a bitter smile, and became silent without answering. The strength he obtained was after all from Hera whom had given him the ability to Level Up in real life. This was a power that exceeded common sense, and most

definitely was a power that couldn't be measured just by looking at appearance.

「If purely basing it on looks……..Fighting Power, is 4」

「I'm below garbage?!!」

「……..Fine, I'll give you 5 then」

「Oi, That barely means I am on the same level as garbage! No if you wanna say it like that, you also don't look that strong you know」

「That……Isn't true. If I undress/strip, I'm amazing」

「Exactly what are you referring to as "Amazing"?!」

It was Taiyou's usual retort to her absurd statements, however this time around, unlike previously, she actually look a little depressed.

「I trained it too much……..It's a, body, that doesn't resemble anything womanly」

「……It doesn't seem like that to me」

Taiyou said this as a passing comment. To Taiyou, her body was splendidly ・・・・・womanly.

He did not want to see her depressed expression, and he wanted to cheer her up.

However, the second part of the words did not come out of his mouth. What should he say first, in what way? Taiyou had absolutely no experience in giving compliments to girls and couldn't understand what to do.

Without being able to say anything, they proceeded to their destination in silence. From the back Hera was saying「Taiyou-chan you are incompetent/good-for-nothing nanodesu～」, but Taiyou himself, also thought that he was pathetic and he couldn't say anything in return.

「We, arrived」

「By here you mean?…….Oi oi」

Shirokiyami and Taiyou both stopped their footsteps and what Taiyou saw was…….Something which made his eye's pop. It exists from the T junction, the residence that had been surrounded by a high wall security fence that was

adjoined from the right to the left respectively that spanned over 100 meters in diameter. From the front a fortress like gate that was huge stood in place, most likely there were camera's set up in place in order to determine whom their guest was before opening the door.

「This is Junishima's Feudal Lord Mansion」

「That such a huge building existed so close to me……I didn't even know it. Since I was a child, I used to come here often to play」

「Normal people won't be able to find this place……As they will be prevent from passing」

「I see」

Well then, Taiyou thought about what he was going to do from here on out.

First of all, he wanted to determine his opponent's location, so he got Shirokiyami to guide him. And now he has finally arrived safely to the location, but truthfully he didn't really have a clue as to what he was going to do after.

Would it really be a good choice to do what Hera said, and just totally annihilate them?

(Well that would after all be the most effective choice, however…) Taiyou always tries to decide his goals, and then he would go over the options that had the highest chance of making it into a success.

In this scenario he had two main goals, 1. To stop them from trying to snipe/assassinate him, and 2. To stop them from trying to kidnap the three sisters. Only these two things.

If he acted just like Hera has suggested and he tried to wipe them out, will he really be able to achieve his goals?

If he did such a thing, he didn't really mind the fact that it was a little unreasonable, but if it didn't really achieve his goals then it would have no meaning in just destroying their base.

「What's, wrong?」

Shirokiyami was quietly staring at him as she asked.

「Weren't you going to just, kill, them…….All? 」

「No no, I don't think I've ever mentioned anything like that?」

「If you do, it will be, easier」

「Even If I were to take such an extreme measure, I won't be killing anyone, at the most, all I will do is defeat them」

「Leaving the root of the problem……..Is, not, good」

「No, no no」

Taiyou had a bitter smile, as expected hearing a phrase as brutal as "Kill everyone" provided too much stimulus for him.

「By the way, I'm just asking but, do you think we can capture the person named Sakura?」

「If it's dead or alive, possibly」

「Why are you able to say such things so fluently?! —more like you can't speak like that, we need to capture them alive! 」

「……..Only, if you, give me, a bon-us」

「I'll pay you just like we agreed!」

Taiyou answered un-hesitantly.

The appearance of Sakura's figure crossed his mind. Although she was his enemy, he didn't want to think of her as being dead or alive.

Shirokiyami, pulled out her Japanese sword (the one with the plain wooden sheath) and takes it out from among her lacey skirt, she advanced ahead one step towards the door.

「Hera」

Taiyou talks in a whisper to the fairy whom is flying by his side.

「Yes. What is it desuka〜? 」

「From here on out, The direction I am looking at and my blind spot……..In other words please cover my rear. If you see something approaching me from behind please let me know immediately」

「Roger～ nanodesu!」

Hera salutes and flew straight behind him.

Physical strength that cannot be imagined just from his external appearance, and the skill『Long Range immunity』He thought that was all the weapons he had under his arsenal, however he realized that he could make use of something else as well.

It was Hera.

Excluding the three Hayakawa sister's whom kissed Taiyou, there was no other person capable of seeing her appearance right now, and furthermore she was an existence that couldn't be touched/hurt by others. Taiyou realized that she was also a part of his arsenal to gather info.

If he used her well, then she may well be his wild card (AKA joker).

For now the first task he gave her was to supplement his blind spot and warn him of any dangers.

「They came, out」

Shirokiyami spoke. When he turned to face her, the huge gate opened, and a surge of black clothed men came out from the other side of the residence in quick succession.

From amongst the mass of men, there stood out a peculiar existence like a flower that bloomed in the wilderness.

Junishima Sakura, In accordance with her order's the enemy gradually approaches.

Chapter 23: Tadah!

Chapter 25: Bird in a Cradle

Chapter 25

Chapter 24: When you undress it's amazing (I couldn't say it was amazing)

Chapter 26: An Extremely Absurd Fight

Junishima.

It is an isolated/solitary island located on the side of the Sea of Japan. If compared to the two major Islands of Okinawa and Sado, it is ranked third in terms of how wide/large it is.

On the one side, Junishima Island was quite a famous place for being a “village” that actually had a population of one million people.

From a geographic point of view, since it has been recorded in history, the period where Junishima Island escaped the influence of the Japanese Imperial Court is rare, similarly the period in which the island was put under the complete rule of the Court is also rare. Whilst they were submitting their self to the Japanese Imperial Court, at the same time, they were also building their original political power, this is the place known as Junishima Island.

Even now the Junishima Clan rules over the island, and various original laws have been enacted, it was a region with a certain kind of extraterritorial rights.

Amongst the many possessions that the Junishima Clan has within the mainland, the Junishima Feudal Lord Mansion located in Seikasono Town is one

where several men from the clan had gathered.

Even there reception hall spanned over 30 meters squared. When entering there would be four men and four women standing in wait for guests. Three people would be kneeling on the side in a straight line waiting to fix the collars of those who entered, and there was a person sitting on the head seat which was on the other side of a bamboo blind.

Although the figure can't clearly be distinguished due to being behind the bamboo blind, the silhouette is like a woman.

Her name is Junishima Youran, A very important person within the Junishima clan, she is a woman whom is going to become their next clan head for the next term.

Next to her, a man with glasses and who looked sharp and intellectual was sitting on her left, his name was Junishima Kaizen, and he started to make an announcement.

「I will go over the Teresa plan right now. If we take into account the reality of Naburu Minaogawa and the transmigration of Meme Onagawa, the plan should be able to proceed accordingly. Therefore, we will now be advancing to plan the next stage and the extra budget—」

「Kaizen」

Interrupting his word, is a woman of middle age who sits in the center. Her looks to be around fifty and it is being concealed due to the application of heavy makeup……However, due to the excessiveness of the makeup, it actually accentuated her aging and is counterproductive.

She…….is Junishima Tsubaki, one of the pillars of the Junishima clan with heavy influence/authority in the clan matters.

Although they were both influential, the difference between the older woman (Tsubaki) and the younger one (Kaizen) in terms of authority is as big as the heaven and the earth.

「Tsubaki-sama……」(Kaizen speaking)

「You are only permitted to attend this meeting in order report the findings,

was I mistaken? 」

A rotten voice that sticked to you like a gooey substance resounded from the old woman, Kaizen immediately endured the feeling of nausea with a jerk as he lowered his head and bowed deeply.

「It is just like you said」

「In that case, I would like you to refrain from any action that is unexpected ever again, is that clear?」(Tsubaki is referring to how Kaizen was about to talk about his next plan, instead of ending the report)

「……..Yes」

「Was that the end of the report?」

「……..It was the end」

「Then, the next person is Sakura. The Blood Soul plan I have entrusted you with, how is that proceeding? 」

「Yes」

The woman who sat on the opposite side, of the one who just objected. She had a Chignon hairstyle and a tight skirt suit, and a voluptuous pair of knockers/boobies, she was Junishima Sakura.

There is a ranking in each of the working class amongst the clan, and different to the older woman, Sakura was in a position that was destined to be hopeless.

Youran was the child of the legitimate present Clan Head, whereas Sakura was only a child born from a mistress…….She was an illegitimate child.

In the long history of the Junishima Clan an illegitimate child and or the concubine's child has never rose to power or obtained any power. In other words, no matter how good her accomplishments become or how she tries to raise up in rankings, within her whole life, she is destined to only serve the Junishima family and will be blocked from ever ascending to a position of importance.

Sakura answered Tsubaki's question with a sour expression as if she was an insect that was about to be crushed.

「We are currently approaching the plan from two different directions. The first is as usual making use of the eternally little as an experimental body, this particular project is going as planned」

「Is that so? And, what of the other plan? 」

「It is scheduled that we will be securing the three specimens as material in the next few days. We will then be proceeding with the experiment afterwards—」

「According to my desires」

Although Sakura wasn't even finished with her explanation, it was already being disregarded.

「Are the other specimens really necessary to experiment on? Isn't it fine even if we just proceeded as usual and experiment with the eternally little specimen? You said that, the plan proceeding as scheduled, isn't that right? 」

「That is…….Yes」

「In that case, don't worry about the unnecessary things. Besides the other party is just a bunch of "old housemaids", they are replaceable existences, no matter how many die as a result of the experiments we can just replace them easily. There is no need to spare any resources」

「……」

Sakura, becomes silent and doesn't answer. She wanted to say something back, but she was unable to do so, instead she dug her finger nails into the tatami mat and endured.

「What is the reason on your persistence with finding another method? Just say it, speak your mind」

Tsubaki said this whilst she was snuffing out in contempt and looking at Sakura in a deplorable way.

「You, if you don't get your act together, you won't be able to live up to・・・ the expectations of the new moon-sama, this is a very shameful thing—-」 (Tsubaki speaking)

「Tsubaki-sama」

This time Kaizen was the one interrupting Tsubaki.

「What is it?」

「With all due respect. How is it that you would be able to know the idea's/thoughts, of a being as important as New Moon-sama」(TL: 新月様 not sure what this is…..)

Kaizen said this as he stared at Tsubaki. Tsubaki gave him a peculiar glance of a stringy middle-aged woman, and returned a disgusting smile whilst scowling back at Kaizen.

If someone could visualize it, the two people would have fireworks spitting out of their eyes as they glared at each other in contempt. Amongst the clan members these two people had a really bad relationship like: cats and dogs. Kaizen has ambitions in rising through the ranks one day and will one day attempt to overtake Tsubaki's position.

The two people remained in that position for a little white, but before long, perhaps Tsubaki lost her patience and she broke eye contact.

「I suppose, someone of my caliber would be unable to represent such an honored being. However, Sakura」(Tsubaki Speaking)

Whilst continuing to glare at Kaizen, Tsubaki spoke to Sakura.

「Unable to accomplish the simple task you were assigned, is after all going to be a deplorable thing isn't it?」

「…….Yes, I understand」

「Yes. Well I won't ask exactly what it is that you understand. That's because,

I’m sure you understand‥‥‥the consequences of failure」

Tsubaki said this with a stiff expression.

Afterwards, the reports were finished and the meeting was adjourned.

Sakura whom was leaving the reception hall, boiled up in anger and blushed like an octopus. Without needing to say, this is because of Tsubaki’s constant threats that were thrown at her.

「That……..Old Bitch! 」

The amount of people who hated the existence known as Tsubaki was plenty abound within the clan, Sakura was also one of those people. It was true that Sakura was also involved in a power struggle, however it was a fact that she also purely disliked this woman named Tsubaki.

「However……The words the hag said also had some truth to it. Starting a new project yet being unable to put out any results is….」

As she was thinking such things, the figure of the three sisters and the figure of the young boy who protected them floated in her mind.

The only reason the plan was not going as she planned was solely because of the young boy obstructing her. If she was able to somehow get him out of the way, the results would be favorable immediately.

First I must think of a way to deal with him……..As Sakura was thinking about these things, a young man’s voice could be heard calling her from the back.

「Sakura-sama, I have a report to make」

When she turned around, a young man whom was her subordinate was standing there. Sakura immediately rebuild her state of mind, and listened to the report of her subordinate.

「…….What is it? 」

「The man in question, Natsuno Taiyou is coming towards us」

「He is?」

Her calm expression wavered just a little bit. The young boy she was just

thinking about, the one that put her in this difficult situation. By no means did she ever expect/imagine the fact that he would of his own accord come towards her domain.

「What has he come here for?」

「I don't know, he is still just outside out front gate」

「……At any rate, we must drive him away」

「Ummm…….That is」

The man was reticent, as if he still had something to say, it made Sakura frown and pucker up her eyebrows.

「What's wrong?」

「That is……There is a particular image that we captured from our camera's….」

The man had eyes filled with fear.

「『Shirokiyami』she is also with him」

「—tsu!!」(Surprise)

The moment that name was mentioned, Sakura's face started to clearly shake/tremble.

Sakura came out of the mansion, and the image she presented was the same appearance she had previously when she first met Taiyou. It was a perceptive gaze that could send shivers up your spine. A tight suit skirt that depicted a capable woman that brought out an atmosphere of professionalism.

To her appearance, there was a certain kind of anticipation for Taiyou.

Without knowing what Taiyou's real intentions were, Sakura approached Taiyou to a distance where her voice could reach him, she also brought along her underlings in black with her.

「Natsuno Taiyou」

「Junishima Sakura」

「I shall ask you without holding back, you, what have you come here for?」

「There is something I must request. No, it would be good if this could all be settled with a mere request」

「Yes, so what kind of thing are you suggesting?」

Unlike when he first met Sakura, she spared no time to talk in pleasantries and immediately asked for Taiyou's intentions. Taiyou was feeling a sense of incompatibility and a disappointed feeling but he directly answered her question nonetheless.

「I want you to stop targeting the three sisters completely」

「I refuse, is that all you have come here to say?」

「……..Ahh」

Taiyou nods. Was Sakura's true personality really this cold? The feeling of incompatibility within Taiyou grew more and more. Without even giving it a single thought and without hesitation, Sakura was succinctly giving him a straight answer. He started to wonder if something changed, or if this was her true personality.

Chapter 24: When you undress it's amazing (I couldn't say it was amazing)

Chapter 26: An Extremely Absurd Fight

Chapter 26

Chapter 25: Bird in a Cradle

Chapter 27: The Bird's Cradle

The amount of times in which Taiyou had met Sakura was so little that it could be counted with his five fingers, furthermore the duration of time in which they spent together is to the extent of putting some hot water into a Cup Ramen and waiting for it to fully cook. He had not really known her for a very long time, however Taiyou felt that he had a connection with her to a certain degree.

She was not this kind of blunt/snappish woman, at the very least, she was usually a lot more composed/calm.

That was the reason he was looking forward to conversing with her, however, she was like a completely different person, it couldn’t be helped that he held a bit of doubt and disappointment.

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan～」

Seeing the hesitation in Taiyou’s eyes, Hera gently whispers quietly into his ears.

「It’s not the time to be thinking such things desuyo～. First of all we need to solve the problem with the girl’s ～」

「……I suppose so」

Taiyou rearranged his thoughts and mutters in a whisper that could barely be heard. After that he one again faced Sakura's direction, and continues to point out his demands.

「I'll ask one more time, the girls…….The Hayakawa triplets, I want you to stop pursuing them as some kind of research object」

「I refuse」

She flatly and straight forwardly declined.

「Then allow me rephrase my question, Who should I talk to……No, who has the authority to negate the decision? Who is the person in charge? 」

「It is I」

「……In that case, what is it that I have to do to convince you? 」

「……」

Sakura was silent and did not answer. Taiyou couldn't really say for sure if what she said was the truth, but, he understood that she was the one in charge of the operations.

「Shirokiyami」

「I understand」

When Taiyou calls out her name, she advances a step towards them, and she takes her fighting stance with the sword she pulled out of her skirt.

The sword is sheathed and put back into its scabbard, her body is inclined forward and she takes on a position that Taiyou has seen previously.

It was the Iai technique, this was the word that came into his head as he saw her stance.

「I never expected, that you would become our enemy」

「I am…….A pro, as long as someone, pays」

「It's my mistake to have discontinued the contract, however」

As she said this, (Click), she clicked her fingers together.

When she did, as if acting to her click, the black clothed men around her all took out their weapons one after another.

Just like that, it would seem that various firearms were pointed at us.

Rifles, Guns, Sub-machine-guns, Shot guns, Military Assault Rifles, Large scale machine guns (fixed type), even a rocket launcher was taken out.

「Aren't you exaggerating the situation a little?!」

Taiyou let out a vigorous retort that made his voice crack, however, Sakura had a blank expression on her face.

「『Shirokiyami』is our opponent……..Shoot」

Almost without any warning whatsoever, Sakura issued orders to begin shooting.

Taiyou was surprised.

However, in the next instant, his body moved by spinal reflex and it bypassed his brain. He gripped the slender arms of Shirokiyami, and threw her away backwards.

Although she was petite, she was a full-fledged 16 year old, 140 centimeters tall woman. Even if the weight was not something excessively huge, it was a decent weight of a person.

And Taiyou was able to easily fling her away.

Shirokiyami, was fluttering about in the middle of the air, and she had an astonished/amazed expression.

In the next instant the earth shook.

Guns, rifles, short machine guns, rocket launchers, shot guns, assault rifles and Gatling guns…

Various firearms were all fired simultaneously towards Taiyou, and total destruction ensued.

It was the kind of barrage that could only be seen as overkill if it was to be used on one man, if it was any normal living thing, the thermal power and destructive power of such a barrage would definitely cause a person to be grinded to dust

without an exception.

However, there was an exception.

As the volley of attacks is stopped, the smoke/dust begins to clear away gradually. The ground which was relentlessly bombarded should have been gouged out——however in the center of the explosion, Taiyou was still standing there alive and well.

Not to mention his body, even his hair and clothes were completely unharmed.

Looking at such a spectacle, Sakura and her gang of black clothed men could only stare in fright/astonishment.

「Y, you….What is happening? 」

「I've said this before but, if you want to defeat me then you better be prepared throw a nuclear bomb」

「Tha, that can't be…..」

Looking at such a ridiculous spectacle Sakura was at a loss for words. The people who actually fired the shots (black clothed men) showed a different reaction. Originally the firearms they held within their hands, gave them an absolute sense of power and security. The moment that such an absolute existence is denied, what grasped into their hearts was instead the feeling of fear.

「F, fire!!」

「Uwaaaaaaaaa!」

「You monster!」

They lost their senses due to the fear/panic and they let out a second volley of attacks almost instantly.

Just like the first time, they aimed at Taiyou's general location accurately…… however, the fact that it was completely useless against Taiyou was once again clarified.

When the smoke clears up, Taiyou was as per usual flawlessly unharmed. In order to produce an even more overwhelming sense of futility, Taiyou squatted down in that location.

This was very effective, an absolute sense of despair sunk into the black clothed man and seeing the calm appearance of Taiyou, the men began to run away and disperse like a spider's children.

Most of them ran away but, there was a couple who remained to stay.

Their expression were still ruled by fear, however they held it down, and they stepped in front of Sakura as if trying to protect her. (**Illustration: Come At Me!)**

Though the majority of them still held up their firearms, about two people threw away their guns and pulled out a knife/dagger.

Taiyou hesitated.

His only skill was "Long range immunity" that was it. In other words, if it was just bullets or even cannonballs being shot at him he could remain completely calm, however if the opponent was holding a sharp blade, this logic no longer applied to him.

In addition, if you were to exclude his only ability so far, he was in fact just a normal high school student. The possibility of him winning against the men whom held weapons……..there is no guarantee that he will be able to defeat them without getting stabbed.

What should I do…..Just as he was thinking this?

「Ah…….」

Taiyou was able to perceive something from the corner of his view.

Far away from Sakura's location above the skies, something bright and white was floating in the sky like a harvest moon. It was like the rabbit that lived in the moon, a white shadow. (TL: The Moon rabbit in folklore and it is a rabbit that lives on the moon. Based on pareidolia that identifies the markings of the Moon as a rabbit)

「Shirokiyami」

Her name slipped out of his mouth. Before he was aware, the white girl explosively leaped from the back, and like an angel she swooped down gracefully.

「Free Style『Reverse-Heaven Wandering Bird』passes by」(TL:「自在流、『逆天の流離るり』、まかる通る」if anyone can help me get a better meaning, that would be awesome. 逆天 can also mean "Against the Gods" just like the title of my favorite novel, maybe "God-Slaying" can be used as well)

Unlike the way she would normally pronounce her words, the name of the technique she called out was awe-inspiring.

Shirokiyami flew right into the midst of the enemy's camp and began to cut down everything in her sight with the national treasure『Reverse-Heaven』(Against the Gods: name of her sword). In the blink of an eye the remaining men clothed in black were all cut down by her sword.

The event doesn't even pass a minute, Taiyou could not even comprehend what she was doing as it all occurred so fast. The only things displayed to him was a glint/flash of moonlight that shone in his eyes, and the black clothed men who fall noisily to the ground one after another in less than a breaths interval.

The type of technique she used? He had absolutely no clue.

「With this, it should cover……..My wag-es」

Shirokiyami points her sword at the scruff of Sakura's neck, and looked at Taiyou in her usual expression.

It was an expression that asked him, "is this good enough?"

「……You, are amazing」

「I'm……A pro after, all. I will work, for my sala-ry」

「Is, is that so? Come to think of it, the thing that was said before—-」

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan～」

He was about to ask Shirokiyami a question, but Hera suddenly whispered in his ear.

Taiyou was about to be derailed from the objective and Hera was trying to remind him of what was important, he “thanked” Hera with his gaze and he strengthened his resolve as he faced towards Sakura, who had a sword on the scruff of her neck.

「With this it has been decided, right? Now, please promise to withdraw taking any action against the girls」

「Even if you do this kind of thing, it will not have any meaning」

Sakura didn’t answer with a「yes」or a「no」.

「What are you talking about? Weren’t you the one in charge of the operations? 」

「Yes, I am the person in charge. 『Site/location』, Although I am only in charge of the dirty work」

「What do you mean?」

「If you say it in a single phrase, I am a replaceable existence, above all the plan which has been set in motion cannot be stopped even if I were to die, that’s the kind of meaning it has 」

「In other words–」

「Ahh～, does she mean that she is a chief clerk?」

Hera instinctively let out a few words in his ear. He didn’t really grasp the meaning behind her words when she said that she only had authority at the site/location, however when she mentioned that she was only a chief clerk, he understood immediately.

The fact that someone of a clerk status could not really effect the decisions of a company, is something that even Taiyou. Who was a high school student could easily imagine.

This was Taiyou’s blunder, he was seeing things only in the way that he wanted to.

He gave the person known as Junishima Sakura a high evaluation of his own accord, and (Taiyou thought) that amongst her own organization, she would be quite important in terms of her position, being able to hand down orders and such.

This was totally unrelated to how it actually was. Taiyou was at a loss for words, and he was confused as to what actions he should take from now.

Even if he could fling a girl the same age as him tens of meters away, or even if he could withstand a bombardment of heavy firearms, after all in the end he was just a high school student.

The ability to make informed decisions and more importantly his experience were overwhelmingly insufficient.

Therefore, he could not think of a method to break down the problem into manageable pieces. Even the mind that was supposed to be more calm the more he is in a pinch, did not work as he would have liked it to.

In the midst of his despair, Shirokiyami, fired out a few striking words.

「I have…..A method」

「What is it?!」

Taiyou grabbed at her words of hope, it was as if he was stuck in hell and there was a single strand of spider silk dangling in the air that could pull him back to safety.

Chapter 25: Bird in a Cradle

Chapter 27: The Bird's Cradle

Chapter 27

Chapter 26: An Extremely Absurd Fight

Chapter 28: The Asymmetrical Three Sisters

Both Taiyou and Shirokiyami was running back from the road they came from.

Taiyou carried the fainted Sakura on his shoulder as he dashed away.

He was literally kidnapping her in broad daylight. Although they were fleeing from the scene with Sakura in tow, there were absolutely no pursuers, this is because Shirokiyami made sure to get rid of any loose ends.

Whilst they were running away, Taiyou glances at Sakura and asks Shirokiyami a question.

「So, what is this plan that you were talking about earlier? Is there a relationship as to why we need to kidnap her? 」

「Yeah……..It's so we can make it, public」

「Making it public? What are you talking about, how are we supposed to do that? 」

「What these people……Are doing, is human experimentation. Even now, they are in the middle…..of conducting experiments」

「That's true! The girls known as the "Eternally little"! 」

At first Taiyou couldn't understand what she was implying, but after the word "experimentation" came out he suddenly remembered the fact that they were experimenting on a group of people called the Eternally Little.

As if he guessed correctly, Shirokiyami merely nodded quietly.

「Is that so…..I guess we can use this. Though I have been completely sucked into the pace of these people, in actual fact no matter how ideal or desirable being able to create a serum that would make you eternally young is, it is still illegal to do human experimentation, especially if it is leaked out to the public. No matter how much people are bribed in this world, there will also be those that will strongly oppose such a violation of human rights」

「That, is exactly, it」

Taiyou hit himself in the head and thought, "how come I didn't think of such a simple fact?"

Up until now, all he thought about was the three sisters. The idea's he came up with always revolved around the girls.

Though the three people were consistently exposed to dangers, he wasn't able to come out with a concrete way to protect them. In a word, he was just attempting to fix the problem without cutting it at its roots.

Even if it crossed his mind that he could call on the police force to take them into protective custody, it never crossed his mind that he could use the public's opinion to potentially resolve the issue.

The fact that they were already in the process of experimentation, changes everything.

Whilst running at a speed that a normal human being probably couldn't achieve……Taiyou glimpsed at the face of the unconscious Sakura who was on his shoulder.

When he first met her, Sakura wanted him to "Cooperate" with her for the Eternally Little project. Although he didn't really understand the implications of the words at that time, it was a critically factor which indicated she was already experimenting on humans.

「”The poor girls, who……Are vulnerable and weak”. Or maybe another title for the newspapers could be, “The Company behind the scenes of….” Or maybe “the young girls who have been abused and taken advantage of”? 」

「Although I don’t really understand what they really do to the bodies of these girls……I can still imagine the horrific acts they may have done」

「Yes」

「In that case, all we need to do is to get the information out of Sakura」

「Yeah, we bring her…….Torture, the info, out…..of her」

「Torture….?」

Taiyou frowns.

「Her body, or…..Her mind……or her woman’s dignity……If we break one of those things–」

「Uuu…….」

Taiyou suddenly braked his gears, Shirokiyami also stops running a little bit behind him, and he looks behind to face her.

「Is that…..Really effective? 」

Taiyou puckers up his eyebrows and asks Shirokiyami.

「If it’s done in the right way……It’s extremely, effective」

「……」

Hearing this Taiyou knit his eyebrows more and more.

His goal and the means to obtain it, he was considering which one should take precedence/priority.

For Taiyou, he has always considered the means to be of high value. In other words, up until now, in order to achieve his goals, he would not use despicable means to achieve them.

Thus, the word torture caused him to become restless.

Her body, mind or her woman’s dignity.

What Shirokiyami wanted him to destroy/break, was too overwhelming for a

16 year old boy like him.

He couldn't decide which of the three actions he preferred. Taiyou quietly looks at Sakura.

「Isn't there any other methods?」

「There is」

「！」

Suddenly a voice came from the front. Taiyou turned back towards the front whilst still carrying Sakura on his shoulders, and stared in the direction of the voice.

Before her noticed it he already arrived at the intersection of where the entrance to Ohashi Town was. There was a girl standing there with one hand on her waist.

Her height seemed to be around 150 centimeters? A hair that was long and not inferior in length to Shirokiyami's hair. And she had her hair tied to the left and right of her head, in other words it was the hair style known as the twin tail. Her eyes were really big and bright, and she gave Taiyou the feeling that she was overflowing with youthful energy. (**Illustration: Yurikago**)

She puts down her hand from her side, and slowly faces Taiyou.

Taiyou becomes a little cautious and takes a step backwards.

「Ah-don't worry, it's alright, you don't have to be scared. I'm not someone who is suspicious」

Whilst walking casually towards Taiyou, her twin tail shakes to and fro.

「She does not have……Knowledge of military arts」

Shirokiyami talked in a quiet voice so that only Taiyou could hear.

「There is no enemy's in the surrounding desuyo～」

Hera who just finished scouting the area confirms the area is clear.

It wasn't like he was completely convinced that she wasn't an enemy just from that. However, Taiyou did loosen up a little after hearing such information from the two people.

「Then, who are you exactly?」

「Before you ask for someone's name, it is polite to introduce yourself first you know? Natsuno Taiyou-kun」

「There's no point telling you my name if you already know it!」

「tsk, tsk, tsk」

The girl shakes her finger and stuck her tongue out.

「The politeness to introduce oneself has no connection with the fact that I already know your name right? What I'm talking about is your manners/etiquette. Introduce yourself」

The last word that came out of her mouth held a lot of pride in it. Although he was puzzled Taiyou decided to introduce himself.

「….. I am Natsuno Taiyou」

「Yeah, well said. I am……let's see, you can call me『Yurikago』」 (TL; Yurikago also means Cradle)

「Yurikago?」

Taiyou mutters as he glimpsed at Shirokiyami.

For a second there Taiyou started to think that names which were fancy were becoming the norm around here, however when he thought back to how Shirokiyami was also a codename, he kind of understood that Yurikago was something akin to a code name.

「If you want to shorten my name, you may call me by『Yuri』」

「…….uu」

When the name Yurikago was mentioned, for some reason Shirokiyami reacted.

When he glimpse at her, interestingly enough, she had a normal expression on her usually blank face, and a sulky expression could be seen.

What is going on? He wondered…..But, he didn't really have time to think about this in detail. The person known as Yurikago continued to talk.

「Well, I suppose you can call me whatever you like. The main issue for you is finding out why I have come here, and why I wanted to meet with you」

「You…..Out of the girls I've come across so far you are quite eccentric」

「Even if you try to hit on me, its NG, or more like its futile. That's because I don't like the type of guy you are」 (TL: NG = No good)

Seeing how frank/candidly she was speaking out her emotions, Taiyou thought to himself "Yeah she really is unusual".

For some time now, all of the women around him were the type to talk about extra details and be really long winded in their conversations. If he was to talk to them, the main topic would soon be forgotten/derailed, and it was really difficult to control the direction of the conversation.

This was the fact for Hera, the three sisters, Shirokiyami and even the girl on his shoulder. All of them would talk in their own pace, and in a sense, they didn't really listen to what other people were trying to say.

In this kind of sense, Yurikago's frank way of speaking was refreshing for Taiyou.

「I understand. Then let me ask…..What is your objective for coming here? 」

「I wanted to teach you about the thing known as『Blood Soul』」

「Blood Soul? 」

「Ara? (Oh), you haven't heard of this name before? It is the project that you are trying to crush right now」

「—! 」

「You don't have to be so alarmed all the time, it's a really bad habit you know? Moreover, how can we advance our conversation if you're like this? 」

「……」

「Well, if you want to act like that I suppose it's fine, in that case, I will continue the conversation from this distance. Ahh that's right, before we proceed with the conversation there is two things that I have to do first」

「Something that you need to do?」

「Yeah, The first thing is…..this」

As she said this Yurikago, fumbled about and pulled something out, and she presented this to Taiyou.

「What is this?」

「Blindfold, Earplugs and a mouth gag. Please put it on that woman」

Yurikago placed her glance on Sakura as she directed Taiyou.

「Put this on Sakura…..? Why? 」

「If she was to find out about my existence, it will be troublesome later. For this particular matter, we are mutual enemies. Moreover, if she was able to hear the plans I am about to tell you, then she may be able to formulate a variety of counter-measures later, is that alright with you? 」

「……I understand」

Taiyou nods. Her reasoning is logical, she doesn't want to reveal herself to her enemy and she also doesn't want to disclose any details which could be used against her. There doesn't seem to be any problems in listening to her.

「Alright, go on, make it quick. If you don't do this, we can't proceed to the next thing」

「The next?」

「Didn't I just tell you that I had a second thing that I have to do? Hora hora (Look look), quickly, move it」

Yurikago urges Taiyou to hurry. As he expected, she was really different form all the women he had met so far.

He endures letting out a wry smile, he slowly placed Sakura on the ground and started to get to work by applying the things he got from Yurikago.

He blindfolded her eyes, her mouth is bound and her ears were plugged, moreover so as to ensure that Sakura would be unable to take it off herself, he tied her hands around her back with the rope he got from Yurikago.

After he finished doing that, he faced Yurikago.

「Is this good enough?」

「Yeah, yeah, Alright, the next thing is……Yes, yes, it's—Al—right—now!」

She raised her jaws and bends her backside at an extreme angle and shout's out those words.

When she finished doing that, he started to hear the pitter patter footsteps…… of three people who were familiar to him, as they called out his name.

「「「Taiyou-san」」」

When he turned around, the three sisters jumped into his bosom at the same time.

Chapter 26: An Extremely Absurd Fight

Chapter 28: The Asymmetrical Three Sisters

Chapter 28

Chapter 27: The Bird's Cradle

Chapter 29: The lack of boundaries in the last few years

The three sisters jumped into his bosom simultaneously. As soon as he confirmed their appearances, Taiyou stretched out his arms and had an accepting posture. Still, he was pushed back by the tackle of three people and his back was pressed against the wall.

He naturally slid down to the ground as he entrusted his back to the wall, and the three people are quietly embraced.

「You guys, how come…..?」

「That is our words to say」

「Although we were waiting for you to return to the classroom, no matter how long we waited you didn’t come」

「We were really worried」

「Ahh……」

Taiyou had a strained smile on his face, he finally recalled the fact that he went out of school without informing them of anything.

He wanted to secretly resolve the issue so he did not inform them as he went out. He regretted the fact that he could have just said a few simple words in

order to relieve them of their worries.

「My bad, I had something I had to do」

「…….Taiyou-san」

Kotone was watching him with moistened eyes.

「Please……Kiss me」

She, requested him. If he looked carefully, both Suzune and Kazane had the same expression on their faces. If Taiyou was a bystander looking at the situation, he may have thought “What a lewd face” the girls had, however, looking directly into their eyes even he was infected with their intense expressions.

His heart begins to throb, it became unbearable to Taiyou as the three girls were irresistible.

He brought them even closer to his embrace, first of all Kotone’s lips were breathed in. her soft luscious lips were passionately kissed, pressed and sucked up.

The flavor of her kiss was neither sweet nor sour. He didn’t even know whether her lips tasted delicious or not.

Taiyou could only feel warm inside.

The warm pleasant feeling spread throughout his body.

The feeling of sitting on the hard floor gradually disappeared, and what replaced it was a feeling of his body floating in the air.

「Puhaa」(gasping for air)

「Taiyou-san, me too……」

After Kotone it was Suzune’s turn. Suzune had an intoxicated gaze as he went for her lips. Her lips looked exactly the same, however her lips were a little bit smaller.

Prod, Probingly. Whilst kissing her, Taiyou lightly probed her lips with his tongue The more he continued to do this, it was like the tip of his tongue was directly connected to the nerve endings of his nether regions, and he started to

feel a sweet numbness in that area.

(I wonder…. if she also feels the same….?)

Whilst feeling the warmth of her body he was thinking such things. Suzune's petite limbs which were being held in Taiyou's arms, were twitching and trembling every time Taiyou's tongue brushed against her lips. He was curious to know whether she could also feel the wonderful sensations that he felt.

「Taiyou-san……..Suzu-chan……」

「You are next」

When he separated from Suzune, this time he pulled Kazane's body close to him a little violently. He "deprives", this would be the best word to describe his actions. He kissed her intensely and violently.

He pressed unto her lips with enough force to change its shape, he licked her lips. He sucked it up.

When he continued to do this for a while, suddenly, Kazane's body lost its strength.

Her whole body loses its power and all her weight was entrusted to Taiyou.

Taiyou caught her firmly and embraced her even more strongly.

He finally separated from her lips.

Kotone and Suzune both leaned into Taiyou at the same time. Together along with Kazane, the three people were being held tight.

Nobody had to say anything, the four people just continued to enjoy the

aftertaste of their passionate kiss.

Taiyou looked up into the sky.

Up until a little while ago, this was a scene that would have never occurred for someone like him.

For a long time up till now, Taiyou had a dull life without any girls in it.

He was branded as a “good guy” but a girl actually told him it was lame that he was a “good guy”. Additionally there was this one time where he got a chocolate on Valentine’s, however, the girl in question actually told him that she put it in the wrong shoe cabinet by mistake and re took the chocolate. When he thought that it couldn’t get any worse, he was ranked as being the least popular school boy, in an underground school site and he managed to win this title five times in a row.

He thought that he would never get a girlfriend, for his whole life. He even started to think that he would have to rely on those mediation services where you would be matched for arranged marriage or a mixed-race marriage in the future.

Regardless, having this kind of relationship with such cute girls was completely unthinkable to him.

「Taiyou-san…..I really like Taiyou-san」

Someone said those words, and he tried to glance at them to see who it was. Who said it? He wondered, even now he was unable to distinguish the voices of the three, but he guessed that even if he could find out, it was a meaningless thing.

That’s because all of them were looking at him with the same gaze.

「I also love you. Forever and ever, I want to be by Taiyou-san’s side」

「I will do anything to be together, so please let me be together with you?」

「I also really like…..You girls」

When he said so, the girl’s faces were beaming in smiles.

「It’s probably more precise for me to say, that I have always admired you

guys」

「「「You admired us?」」」

The three spoke in a chorus. Taiyou secretly liked this aspect about them. They were able to align the frequency of their voices completely and the voice of three people became the voice of one person.

Every time he heard their voices align, something seemed to stir from the depths of his heart.

Even now it was the same, when he heard their voice sync, he instinctively puts more power in his arms, he hugged them even more closely and their bodies were stuck together.

「Your heart beats…..No is it your frequency? That's also not it, your smells? Atmosphere? At any rate, I really adore the fact that you guys are so synchronized. Even now it makes me…..」

For the time being Taiyou shuts/closes his eyes and he just tried to feel them.

「It's like I am holding on to one person instead of three people, it's a really weird sensation. However, I really like that feeling」

「Is that so?」

A voice was heard, whose voice was it? Was it just one person who said that, or was that all three of them speaking?

Taiyou who closed his eyes couldn't discern such a fact.

And he didn't want to find out the answer.

He wanted the girls to be all together as one.

The Asymmetrical Triplets, they were each their own independent existences, they were three separate girls yet they were also bonded with each other.

「Ahh….I get it now. I found a fitting word to use」

「What is it?」

Taiyou opens his eyes and he looked into the girls eyes.

「You girls… Share the same pure soul don't you? 」

When he said this, the three girls had shocked expressions on their faces.

「Ahh, I'm sorry, I probably said something weird. Please forget about it—-」

「That's not true!」

Kotone spoke in a loud voice and interrupted what Taiyou was going to say. In addition to that, Suzune and Kazane firmly grasped unto his right and left hand.

「It seemed like you guys were showing me a strange and unpleasant face?」

「That's not it, we were just really surprised」

「yeah, we didn't expect you to say such a thing. We didn't expect you to be able to understand us」

「Although we hoped that Taiyou-san would be able to understand, we didn't really believe that you would be able to understand us so well, even without us explaining anything to you」

「What is this about?」

When he asked them to explain, they all separated from Taiyou at the exact same timing and they sat on their knees.

And then Kotone extended her right hand, and made a thumb with her left hand and started to pierce the middle of her right palm with her thumb nail.

「Oi!」 (Taiyou Speaking)

Without thinking Taiyou stood up immediately. However he was stopped by the look on their faces.

Blood started to flow out from Kotone's hands, her fingernail penetrated the skin of her palms and a small blemish could be seen.

Following that, both Suzune and Kazane opened up their right palms to show Taiyou and they each had the same exact wound.

「—tsu!」(Surprise)

Taiyou was mind blown, amazingly the same exact wound appeared on each of their right palms.

He understood this well because he saw it right in front of his eyes, Suzune and

Kazane didn’t physically injured themselves like Kotone did.

In other words, the two other girls didn’t move a muscle, yet their hands just started to bleed on its own.

「Since a long time ago, we have always been like this」

「If one of us got injured, the other two would also get the some wound」

「When we get sick we also share the same cold」

「Is that true?」

「Moreover for us…..It was really hard for us to learn a language. Ne (right guys?)」

「Yeah, it was around elementary school? That was when we were finally able to talk」

「It was because back in those days we used to converse with our minds……. Although it was different from a normal conversation, we three were able to converse with our hearts, that’s why we didn’t really need to learn any words to express our feelings」

「Telepathy…..Among triplets? 」

「Yeah, sadly now we can’t communicate like that anymore」

「Now we are able to converse normally, but we can’t communicate using our mind anymore」

「Yeah, I mean we were acting like a married couple, and we weren’t able to hold any conversations. Although I thought that it was special in its own way」

「Is that so……Ahh, I know what you guys mean」

Taiyou think’s a little bit and nods.

「If you three were put into an unpopulated island and made to live together, you probably would start to forget certain words, is it a little like this?」

「I think it is similar」

「Even now when there is a long holiday, we get a feeling that we start to forget certain words」

「It’s because when three of us are together, there is no longer any need for words」

「Is that so?…….I think it’s kinda cool, that sort of thing」

Taiyou narrowed his eyes as he spoke.

Taiyou truly felt so from the bottom of his heart. The triplets shared the same soul and were able to feel each other, they were connected, and they were able to convey their full emotions without the need for any words. He really envied the relationship they shared with each other.

Chapter 27: The Bird's Cradle

Chapter 29: The lack of boundaries in the last few years

Chapter 29

Chapter 28: The Asymmetrical Three Sisters

Chapter 30: Boss Gorilla

「It's kinda cool?…..–Eh? 」(Kotone Speaking)

Kotone is confused by Taiyou's words and the three girls with the same face (yet different sizes) had a bewildered expression on them.

Was the words he said insufficient? Taiyou supplemented with more words to better explain his thoughts.

「Of course I think that it's cool/good, but more than that, it is probably more correct to say that I am envious…… Of the relationship/bond you guys share between each other. That's because our conversation just now….. Is it correct for me to say that you guys don't keep secrets between each other? 」

「Yeah…..That's….True」

「Or more like, we can't」

「If our emotions are even a little bit heightened it leaks out, even if we try to conceal it, it's completely useless」

「Is it like when the door to your bedroom is broken, that kind of feeling?」

「Yes, yes. It's like its half open, I mean we can close it but the moment our hand leaves the door—-the room will open by itself again. I suppose it's

meaningless in a sense」

「Recently it's been a bother to hold it closed all the time」

「Which reminds me, do you guys remember the time when we got lost in the shopping Centre?」

「I remember, at that point in time we were still able to talk within each other's hearts, we are able to tell each other our locations but we weren't able to guide each other properly」

「The signs in that Centre was really similar, and there was a place that looks identical on every floor, we ended up being spread out on different floors/levels」

「It's because Kaza-chan got on the elevator, I went after Kaza-chan and Suzu-chan in a panic thinking that you guys got swallowed by a big metal box. The door to the elevator closed and suddenly the both of you were gone. Although I realized that you guys were fine in the next instant」

「Although we were in a state of panic, feelings of safety were able to be transmitted so we were able to calm down」

Taiyou's words stimulated their old memories, and the three girls became quite talkative as they reminiscence about their past. These were things that only the three girls would know about.

Their chests which were brushing up against Taiyou all pulsed with the same rhythm of heartbeats. The girls in front of him that shared such vulnerable things about them made him feel that they were so precious to him——unbearably precious.

「Do you guys, regularly talk amongst yourselves like this?」

He couldn't help but to want to participate in the conversation. However with his single careless phrase, their nice atmosphere was broken.

「……..No, that's not true」

「We usually get weird stares from other people, so lately we don't really talk amongst ourselves much even when we are together」

「It's been several years…..approximately」

Their conversations amongst each other was interrupted, and the lovely atmosphere they had around them was completely shattered, and it changed into something different. And it was definitely not something pleasant.

An awkward atmosphere flows out. The current state was achieved with a single careless phrase from Taiyou, and he regretted it so much he could die.

The unified movements they had up till now was also torn asunder.

「Th, that's right, we still need to talk to the person who brought us here–」

Whilst Kotone said this, she erects her body. Around the same time, Suzune and Kazane also parted from him.

The warmth disappears, Taiyou chases after it and his reaches out his hands to grab them.

「Eh?—-Kyaa」

He gripped Kotone's arm and drew her towards him. He put in too much power, and the two girls on the side were dragged into it, and they lost their balance and got tangled up in each other.

「Ouch…..」

They hit their heads together and Taiyou's eyes were sparkling with stars. Taiyou tried to suppress his dazed state by blinking his eyes and lightly shaking his neck.

When he finally regained his vision, right next to him was the appearance of a blushing Kotone.

She was acting all shy/bashful, why was that? And then his vision expanded even more—

「–tsu!」(Surprise)

After seeing the situation he finally understood. When they fell, their bodies were entwined and tangled together, the position was as if Taiyou was pinning her down. Kotone was blushing due to the position their bodies were at currently.

「So, sorry, I didn't mean it」

「「Wait」」

From his left and right he heard the same words, He didn't need to confirm to know that it was Suzune and Kazane's voice.

As the girls called out to stop him, each of them were holding unto to Kotone's hands from each side.

「I…….Don't mind it okay」

Kotone was still blushing…..and she had a face that seemed she was determined as she glanced away from Taiyou's gaze.

☆

Under the bridge where various people with no common sense was gathered. Sakura was dropped off on a spot with a clump of grass on it, Yurikago was sitting with her legs crossed. A little distance away from Yurikago, Shirokiyami who was like a white porcelain doll, had her finger tips linked together and was staring at the riverbed with an unfocused gaze.

Her boundless gaze seemed to be staring at a single point, yet it could also be that she was staring at nothing in particular.

「What are you doing over there?」

Yurikago was curious about what she was staring at and asked her a question. Shirokiyami answered with a straight tone, neither filled with good intention or malicious intent, it was nothing but an earnest response.

「Insect..ti,cide」 (insecticide)

「I don’t understand. You don’t talk very clearly do you」

Yurikago just bluntly states such a fact, unlike Sakura who usually speaks in a more round about manner, Yurikago just isn’t the type of girl to play with her words.

「I think that it’s…..Clear enough. Everyone knows that…..obstructing/intruding on a pair of lovers, is what an insect does」

「I see. So, what do you plan to do? 」

「Threaten. People who get near…….I will kill them, that kind of threat」

Shirokiyami made an abstract explanation. Yurikago was a little doubtful, but after she thought about it for a while she was able to grasp the meaning behind the words.

「I understand, you released a barrier of killing intent around this area, didn’t you? What a handy skill you have there」

「Because I am being employed, this is…..Also a part of the job to earn my salary」

「Hee」(acknowledging, hee= is that so?)

「Moreover」

「Moreover?」

「That person’s body temperature……Feels really good. The girl’s feelings…..I under, stand」

「……Eh? 」

Yurikago’s eyes were wide open, and she had a slightly surprised face.

「I am surprised, that『Shirokiyami』can act like this. No, I suppose since the start you were always a woman? 」

「……？」

Shirokiyami just stared blankly and tilted her neck at Yurikago’s words.

「What’s with that reaction?」(Yurikago Speaking)

「I don’t…. Know. From the start, I was always…..a woman」

「Ahh, I suppose you are the type of person who doesn't even understand their own feelings」

「？？？」

The girl with white hair just stares at Yurikago in puzzlement.

「Well, I suppose it's none of my business that you are being a faithful dog」

「I don't really understand…..What you are say….ing」

「If you become an adult woman you will understand」

「But you are also, not an adult」

「I am a worldly-minded person, so my mind is considerably more dirtied than you」

Yurikago laughs under her breath.

「Is that, sarcasm?」

「Not really? If I were to put a word it's envy」

「……？」

「Oh come on, I just thought that you were the type of human being who is not tainted no matter the situation. Although I am, boastful of the amount of knowledge amassed within my brain. I can't think of a way to make you corrupted/contaminated. In that meaning/sense I'm jealous of the fact that you can remain so pure」

「…….As I thought, sarcasm」

「Yes?」

「I am…..Extremely tainted….that's why」

Shirokiyami gazed at her own hands.

Yurikago correctly understood the meaning…..of her actions. Yurikago was a woman who knew of Shirokiyami's notoriety, prestige and on top of that she even knew Shirokiyami's real name.

Although she really understood why Shirokiyami was looking down at her own hands.

「That's not what I meant」(TL: Yurikago is not referring to the blood Shirokiyami has on her hands, she is referring to her pure mind, and the fact that Shirokiyami doesn't enjoy killing or torturing people, though I don't know her back/origin story I'm sure it will be disclosed down the track)

Yurikago picked up a pebble from the ground, and like a natural she flicked the stone right at Shirokiyami. Shirokiyami doesn't avoid the stone, and just gets hit by it.

「It hurts (ouch)」

「For someone who naively got hit by that stone without avoiding it, stop babbling on about how you are tainted」

「Meaning, don't….understand」

「Obviously, I suppose a natural airhead like you won't understand 」

Yurikago finished off with that and returned to the topic at hand.

「Let me confirm one thing, you are working for that man right?」

「……Yes, for my salary」

「That's more than enough info. Seriously, what part about that man is good I wonder? 」

Yurikago says that and she went into deep thought

Because Yurikago doesn't say anything, Shirokiyami goes back to being an insect repellent and releases her killing intent, she turns her gaze upwards, and she can feel the atmosphere of the people above the bridge.

「……..Ah」

「What's wrong?」

「Yeah, there's something……」

「Yes?」

「For some reason…….I want to do…..this」

「What are you talking about?」

Yurikago looks doubtful, Shirokiyami who had a really calm complexion just

until a little while ago had a strange look on her face.

Her usual expressionless face was still predominantly the same, but there was something weird about it.

Shirokiyami suddenly turns her body around, and unsteadily walks towards the wall. Just when Yurikago was thinking what she was going to do.

Pechi, Pechi, (sfx of hitting something), Shirokiyami starts to strike/kick the wall. Without any power, she just starts to strike the wall continuously in that kind of manner. At first Yurikago was confused, but then she her face flared a deep red color and she dashed to the top of the bridge.

「No matter how you see it, isn't it doing way to much!!」

On top of an unpopular bridge, there was two sisters who were baring their elder sister and was in the process of presenting her to Taiyou.

Chapter 28: The Asymmetrical Three Sisters

Chapter 30: Boss Gorilla

Chapter 30

Chapter 29: The lack of boundaries in the last few years

Chapter 31: The Unmindful Princess

Kotone turned her face away, and her eyes were shut. Her face was flushing in heat and it was a really bewitching look of a girl who was resolute, Taiyou's heart was throbbing like crazy with a dokun (heartbeat sfx).

And as if he was given one final push over the edge, the triplets both from the left and the right were nestled/snuggling really close to him. One person was fixing Kotone's hair, the other person was taking off her blazer type uniform and exposing her chest.

Dokun, Dokun, Dokun…….. (Sfx heartbeats)

His heartbeat was growing louder by the moment, and he felt like at any moment, his heart would just dash out of his mouth.

His throat dries up and becomes raspy and the root of his tongue also felt really dry, it was that kind of feeling.

And, the blood stream of his whole body converges at a particular place, and a sweet aching starts.

「Kotone…..」

He whispers into her ears, and he raises the forelock that drifts over her forehead gently.

The moment Taiyou's hand touched her, Kotone's body quivered. (Sfx bikun =tremble) At the same time a hot passionate breath leaks from her mouth, she appears to be completely・・・・・prepared.

Just like that, Taiyou, brings his face closer to the breasts which were bared open by the sisters.

「No matter how you see it, this is going overboard!」

「—tsu!」(Surprise)

Because of the sudden interruption, the sweet atmosphere around them was completely blown away. Taiyou who got the hugest surprise of his life, felt that his heart seemed like it could pop out. He immediately separated from Kotone and stood straight up.

When he turned around, what he saw was the appearance of a girl with a twin tail with a crimson face and an angry expression.

「Certainly I gave you some space so that you guys can talk it out, however it's not like you guys can just do whatever the hell you want, alright?! I don't really care that you guys were acting out some sort of rape play in the middle of the day and outdoors for that matter! But please think of the timing! 」

「Ah, Uuu…….I mean… That iss……I'm sorry」

Yurikago was furious as she gave him an extremely menacing look, and Taiyou apologized meekly. When he looked back at it, what he was about to do here was probably a really bad decision.

He was currently on the Ohashi Bridge, which was an important traffic route between the two towns: Hirohise and Seikasono. Even during midnight, it would not be weird to see passer-bys or a car passing through.

And even if it was a little bit away, they were still quite close to the entrance. Taiyou could only shiver at the thought that people would find him at the crime of such a love scene.

「Geez! this is why virgins are……You better remember to control you lower

body and rein it in a little, alright?!」

「Aiya……I am ashamed」

「Good grief, if I knew that you guys were acting out such a cheap love scene, I would have just left you here without helping you」

「Help—-」

When the word help was said, he suddenly remembered.

「Incidentally, why were you with the girls?」

「You are slow in remembering such things!」

Yurikago had an astounded look on her face.

「Just now you guys entered into your own fantasy worlds, and was about to act out on your sexual desires 」

「That is our fault」(Kotone Speaking)

「When we met him we were just so happy」(Suzune Speaking)

「That's why it just flowed that way」(Kazane Speaking)

「I don't really blame you guys for it」 (Yurikago Speaking)

Yurikago was quite lenient with the girls and this time it was Taiyou's turn to be completely astonished.

「Hey you, aren't you going to become the Harem king?」

「That is…..」

「What? Do you plan on throwing away these girls? 」

「No, that won't happen. I plan to take responsibility for them until the end」

Taiyou asserted confidently.

Although even now, they still haven't sealed the deal, but in his heart it was already a done deal. In this case, it was natural for him to want to take responsibility.

「Taiyou-san…..」

「Are you telling……The truth? 」

「Responsibility……Responsibility…..」(Kazane is going crazy~)

The three sisters were reacting to Taiyou's words. Kazane seemed to reach some sort of conclusion in her own mind, and thinking about that "something" made her cheek blush red.

「Ahh, I am serious. Right now—」

「Like-I-Said-」

Before Taiyou was able to finish his sentence, Yurikago cuts him off with a voice that seemed shocked.

「That kind of behavior is not allowed. Listen up, if you really want to become a Harem King, then go look and learn from the wild animals of the jungle, got it?」

「Why animals?」

「Amongst humans there are a lot of cheating males, especially those males that are good at spouting sweet words」

Taiyou somehow remembers about Sakura.

「What I mean is you should look at animals for a good example of things. The male of the animal in a polygamy fights it's enemy's and takes full responsibility, the wives of the pack are completely defended, got it? If you look at a lion or gorilla this will become obvious」

「Hee (is that so?)」

「From here on, you will be taking the position of defending these girls. Although it's fine if you want to spout words of love, but pay attention to your surroundings when you pledge your love. If you are completely absorbed with them, and forget to be mindful of your surroundings, you could be easily taken out by the enemy and your pack could be annihilated in one fell swoop, isn't that just utterly stupid? 」

「……ahh」

Taiyou nods. He thought that the word Yurikago spoke had some sense in them.

Taiyou along with the three sisters and Yurikago all moved under the bridge.

He was met with the still fainted Sakura, and for some reason a Shirokiyami who was hitting the walls and beating it up.

Six people except for Sakura was standing in a circle.

「And so, why was it that you were with the three girls?」

After calming down, Taiyou re asked the question to Yurikago again. When he did ask her, Yurikago had an expression which said “You are so slow to ask such things” as she stared at him, maybe it was because of her straight forward personality, but she didn’t actually say the words and just proceeded to advance with the story.

「I heard information from a source that both you and that white girl was planning on destroying the『Blood Soul』Plan. And when I knew about the three girls being targeted, I thought I would take the liberty of bringing them along before they became hostages」

「By the way, I know you said this a little while ago but what is this『Blood Soul』you mentioned that it was a plan of some sort?」

「That’s right,『Blood Soul Plan』. It is the name of the research being advanced under Junishima’s clan present master for the next term.

「Research? You mean about that longevity? 」

「That is precisely the case, it’s the research about being able to achieve perpetual youth」

Yurikago was saying this with a snort before she continued.

「You, how much of this plan are you aware of?」

「It is from her–」

He glanced at Sakura.

「—-I've heard about the story from Sakura, apparently it is a research about beauty. What was it again……..Eternally Little? She said something about making use of them and advancing the research」

After saying that, this time he turned his gaze towards the three sisters. The three girls bowed their heads, and nodded in assent.

「That's about right, however that is not all there is to it」

「What do you mean?」

「What are they using the Eternally little for? Or why are they using the Eternally Little? Those questions have yet to be answered. You think to think more deeply about the meaning of those questions」

「Eternally little……」

「When they pass the age of ten, these females, their growth and aging stops」

Shirokiyami mentions this in a mutter.

「That's right. Moreover the Eternally Little only consists of females, thus they want to research it, and find out the cause for their non-aging and by solving it, they hope to achieve perpetual beauty—」

「Perpetual youth, don't they feel out of place if they never grow old?」

Yurikago stares at Taiyou even more intensely.

Although Taiyou had a momentary mind blank, the idea caught up with him after taking another breath.

「—-Is it immortality they seek?」

「That is correct」

Yurikago nods.

「Ahh, of course the thing about achieving beauty is also not a lie. But under the pretense of making a woman beautiful, they are able to officially garner more attention and thus make more money from it. Also from a technical point

of view, the latter is essentially perennial youth…..and it is more feasible to achieve this than unlocking an immortality gene. That's why they are doing this, I mean if things go well than they may also unlock immortality, either way they get huge benefits, that's how it is」

「So that's what this is about….」

「More like, it is a mystery to me how you did not arrive to this conclusion by yourself much sooner」

「No… Well if you didn't explain it to me in this way, there would have been plenty of different ways to infer their motives, right? 」

Taiyou says this with a bitter smile on his face. He felt like he just came out of a quiz in which he was given so many hints, before he could solve it.

「Yeah, it is an absurd thing」

「Hm?」

「I'm saying that all this research about trying to achieve immortality is just an absurd proposition. In the first place, how many brilliant researchers in the past history have failed to come up with the answer to immortality? 」

「Well I suppose that is true, But this time around, it would seem that they are getting quite close and it can be said that it is no longer an impossible feat to achieve. From a theoretical stand point….I can't say I know much about the Eternally Little but if such a human being does truly exist, although achieving immortality is one thing, advancing in the research of obtaining perpetual youth seems quite likely」

「Fun(exhales). Tell me, if you girls were to achieve that state of perpetual beauty what would you think? 」

「Eh?」

「For example those three, if they were able to continuously keep up their current faces and not age, whilst you alone become an old grandfather, what would you think?」

「That is…..」

Taiyou became vacant as he looked at the three sisters, and he imagined such

a scenario in his head.

He imagined himself going out of school and entering the society, and pursuing a normal job for himself. And the companion which stood next to him, doesn't change at all and their appearance remains that of a young girl.

He was imagining that kind of spectacle.

「That is….」

At first he thought, it was considerably good, but then a sense of incompatibility gradually dawned on him.

Something would be weird. But what would be out of place? He didn't really know the clear answer to that question.

2015/04/08 Post Scripts

Memo at the time of the 30th Chapter

【Level】5

【Main Abilities】

Strength: 30

Charm: 65535

Popularity: 0

Skill: Long distance immunity

Fighting Power: 5 (According to Shirokiyami)

【Main Properties】

A debt of about 11 million yen (+one million yen)

An annoying Fairy (Virgin?)

A broken Smart phone

One room apartment

【Brides】

Kotone, Suzune, Kazane

【Acquaintances】

Yurikago

Shirokiyami (An evil god, Fighting Power: 139)

Miyagi Aoba

Junishima Sakura

【People who can see Hera】

Hayakawa: Kotone, Suzune, Kazane

Chapter 29: The lack of boundaries in the last few years

Chapter 31: The Unmindful Princess

Chapter 31

Chapter 30: Boss Gorilla

Chapter 32: Lincoln

「Well, If you don't really know the answer, than it's fine. The three girls aren't classified as the Eternally Little, besides I'm going to crush that plan without fail. The thing I said about them being perpetually young won't happen anyways, so don't worry about it」

「……You plan to crush them? Wasn't it your plan to just give me the vital information? 」

Though Taiyou feels caught up in Yurikago's words, this only lasted momentarily.

「Ahh is that so? You want to leak out the information to me so that I will be your『Means』of destroying them」

「That's right, allow me to tell you that "using" you is just a『means』, the『objective』is to completely destroy the plan/project 」

「Is that so? I understand」

Taiyou nods, on the contrary Yurikago who had so easily persuaded Taiyou to accept her proposition of making use of him was really bewildered.

「What? Are you just going to let me make use of you? 」

「Yea, I am」

「Are you really alright with that Taiyou-san?」

One of the triplets next to him, interjected in the conversation. Their faces were filled with surprise towards Taiyou, and towards Yurikago it was a mix of distrust and antipathy.

「It's fine」

「But, didn't she just say that she was just using you?」

「Moreover we don't really know the true colors of this person」

「I think it's too dangerous to trust her」

「……..I understand where you guys are coming from」

「In that case—」

「However, for the time being, our『Objectives』coincide with each other. And the most important thing is that, her『Means』to accomplish that objective, includes the plan to protect you girls from harm」

「After all, that is just one of my『means』So depending on the situation, that may change in the future」

「I know, but protecting the girls will put you in the least riskiest scenario, right? In other words, it will be your most preferred method/means」

「That is not exactly the case, it is better to say that this plan will be the easiest to settle later on」

「That is exactly why your『objectives』are in line with mine」

「Well, I suppose that seems to be the case」

Yurikago acceded to the statements and stopped arguing. After silencing her, Taiyou continued to talk to the triplets again.

「It's just like you heard, at the very least she plans on keeping you guys away from danger……The "means" she has in mind and the "objective" that I have are the same. Therefore, even if we join hands I think that it should be fine」

「But……」

「The enemy of your enemy, is not really your ally but you can at least make use of them…..Recently I heard such a saying which I thought applies to our situation right now. I also endorse such an idea. Going according to such an idea I feel like I can trust her……No have confidence that I can trust her」

「……」

The triplets just listened, whilst floating a worried expression.

The three sisters had a face that seemed to want to say something. They don't completely accept Taiyou's reasoning, but at the same time, they don't want to blatantly voice out their complaints.

Looking at their faces, Taiyou thought that at least for now, this plan was adequate.

And once again, he faced Yurikago

「That's how it is」

「Yea, I got it. Even so, both you and I may be more similar than I thought」

「I'm hoping that we can get along…..At the very least until this particular case is settled」

「In that regards, I am the same」

「Well, let's go over the more concrete details, shall we? Not about the content of the information. …….But, I want to know, what is the plan you have in store for me? 」

「I want you to come along with me, and steal information」

Yurikago's pupils were shining with fire as she said those words, she was like a carnivorous animal that was eyeing her prey.

At night: the hands of the clock were about to face up.

Taiyou and Yurikago was in a town called Gyoushika Gouroku. Gyoushika was a town that existed on the borders of Seikasono town, and in between the towns there was a mountain called Mt. Futagoyama Mountain which spanned over 100 meters in height.

They were near the research facility that was in Gyoushika. The two people were in a building that was able to oversee the research facility from a long distance away.

Right now Taiyou was accumulating experience points by taking of his coat and putting back on again. Next to him, Hera was silently watching over him.

He didn't know what to expect from here on out, so he thought that he should continue to raise his abilities even if only a little.

Although there was only Yurikago with him right now, he was actually raising his level in front of her. In more normal circumstances, he would never do such an action in front of others, however, just this once he thought that it was necessary in order to accomplish his objectives.

「Although this may be trivial of me to ask, is there any significance to your current actions?」

「I'm getting stronger」

Yurikago was just staring at him in silence for a while but, she finally got curious enough to ask him what he was doing.

Taiyou responded to her question in a joking tone.

「Kung fu?」

「That's right」

「…….You, do you actually think that something you watched in some anime could be applied to real life? 」

「Why do you reach such a conclusion?」

「Well, I mean it seems that you aren't able to distinguish between reality and make believe」

「I can distinguish! I'm just a normal person! I'm not crazy enough to think that doing this will actually teach me Kung Fu」

「Then why are you doing such a thing?」

「…….It's for my mental concentration. When I do this, I can settle down my feelings easier and focus」

Taiyou took a deep breath and answered her.

This was not a complete lie, gathering experience did in fact have that calming effect on Taiyou. Piling up enough experience in order to gain a level and increase his stats. For Taiyou this was the ultimate form of mind and soul healing.

Of course, he didn't mention the fact that this action was just a small part of the truth.

「Well, If that's the case then I won't stop you」

「……..Are the girls, okay you think? 」

「Those three girls?」

「Yeah」

Taiyou takes of his coat whilst nodding.

In this place, neither Shirokiyami nor the three sisters were here. Yurikago gave the idea/proposition to entrust the three sisters with Shirokiyami.

「They should be fine, after all that woman is guarding them」

「That girl, is she really that amazing?」

「More so than amazing, from what I know, if you compare her amongst her peers within the same generation, without a doubt she is the world's strongest in her field of work」

「Seriously?」

「For real」

「Then why did we separate from her? I mean if she truly is the world's strongest, shouldn't we include her as part of our war potential in this plan?」

「After all she is still in her teens. …..She is not easily controlled. If we give her simple orders she will be able to accomplish it without fail, but for her to follow more complex details, her judgment in the scene in important moments aren't exactly the best. In the end, she is just one really strong person」

「……..Is it like an NPC?」

Taiyou was able to come up with this image after hearing Yurikago's explanation. In the games Taiyou often played, there were plenty of NPC with similar characteristics…..Whilst they were indeed extremely strong, the player could not have direct access to them and they could only cooperate automatically. Though they are far stronger than the player character, their movements are usually dictated by a computer and as such they are unable to make the best decisions when the situation becomes overly complex.

Yurikago's explanation was quite short, but when he thought about Shirokiyami's personality, he was becoming more convinced that this would be the case for her.

「If we think about what we are trying to accomplish here, I believe your abilities will be much more convenient for this plan. Furthermore, you seem to think like me, so it will be easier to set things in motion」

「I understand」

Taiyou nods, if that was the case, then he definitely agrees.

Whilst he was continuing to accumulate his experience points, this time around, he was the one to ask Yurikago a question.

「Hey, who on earth are you exactly?」

「Me?」

「Yeah, To begin with, what is your real name? Yurikago is obviously a fake name right? It's not your conventional type of name, besides it sounds like a stage name that you thought up on the spot. If your name was Youran the way in which you would write cradle/basket, then even that would make more sense

than Yurikago」

「Isn't fine to leave it as Yurikago? If you don't know about my real name, is there going to be some sort of a problem? 」

「I don't really mind whatever name you choose, but I still want to know about your true colors. If until the last moment I still don't know your real intentions, when there comes a time for me to make a decision about whether or not to trust you, it will become that much harder to believe in you」

「Is that so?…..Well when that situation comes, do what you must, isn't it fine that way? And if you were placed in a situation where you need to make such a decision, even if you knew my true colors how would that change anything regardless?」

「……」

Taiyou nods and without changing his tone of speaking he continued.

「Well even if you don't tell me, I think I have a general idea of who you are」

「What did you say?」

「Ahh, you don't have to be that vigilant, I don't really know anything major about you. I simply think that you must be an Ojou-sama (young lady) of some rich family.

「……Why do you think that? 」

「It's your atmosphere」

Taiyou was still performing his fluid series of movements of picking up his coat right after dropping it to the ground, when he pointed at Yurikago.

「Since we met in the Ohashi Bridge up till now, your appearance has been consistent. I suppose it can be described as someone who seems "resilient"」

「Isn't it because of the way I speak? And the fact that my eyes are always narrowed. Even I am conscious of such things」

「Well that is also true but……Well the thing about your eyes being narrowed is not really true……but beside the point. I am talking more about your upper-body」

「My upper-body?」

Yurikago's glance drops to her own body, after that she quickly hides her own breasts and glares at Taiyou. Her cheek slightly blushed, it was like she noticed that Taiyou was seeing her girlish parts for the first time.

「No, it's not about your boobs」

Taiyou quietly points it out. The reason he didn't give her a loud retort was because he found the peculiar aspect of Yurikago that he was about to say quite pleasant.

「Your back….No, it's probably better for me to say your muscles along the spine. When I look at your posture it's almost as if you swallowed down some sort of pole, and with that pinned to the ground you have a really nice posture. Even when you stand up or if you sit down, even whilst you are walking, you always have a good posture…..always」(TL: I guess he is implying that a girl from a rich family always stands tall because of the etiquette they were taught when growing up)

After hearing Taiyou explanation, Yurikago slowly relaxes and lowers her hands from hiding her breasts, but she was still keeping a vigilant look on her face.

Taiyou felt that his guess hit right on the mark.

Having a stable proper posture is how an Ojou-sama would have been brought up, her tone of voice, expressions and other mannerisms in which she conducts herself does not seem to be made up. However she also seems to have a wild side to her personality mixed in. Taiyou was becoming increasingly interested in knowing her true colors.

Chapter 30: Boss Gorilla

Chapter 32: Lincoln

Chapter 32

Chapter 31: The Unmindful Princess

Chapter 33: Blood Energy ～ Blood Soul

「That is……No never mind」(Yurikago Speaking)

Yurikago was about to make some sort of a rebuttal, but she shook her head and swallowed her words back down.

「Abraham Lincoln……America's former President of the United States, he said a few words which really stuck with me. When someone passes 40 years of age, a person should take responsibility for his own face, that's what he said」(Yurikago Speaking)「Hmm?」(Taiyou Speaking)

Taiyou inclined his neck a little and gave her a look which said, "Why are you suddenly talking about such a thing?" Yurikago was being really roundabout in the way she spoke, this was totally unlike her usual self.

「Don't look at me with those eyes, it's not really that Philosophical. I'm not suddenly turning into Sakura, I don't have an interest in such things. What I am talking about is, the muscles of the face will form wrinkles and such when making familiar expressions he/she has made in their life, that's what I am referring to」

「An expression one is familiar with?」

I repeated her words like a mechanical parrot whilst having one hand on my cheek.

「Yes, Someone who has been smiling their whole life, will develop strong muscles to make a big grin, people who are quick to get angry on the other hand, will have scary eyes and this will be fixed on their faces, people who like to talk cynically to others will have their mouth distorted…….That kind of thing」

「Ahh, I suppose that how it is」

Taiyou thought that this was the truth.

It is natural that when a part of the body repeatedly does the same motions for their whole life, the body will optimize itself so as to fit a more convenient shape for that person.

「Most of a child's features if they are new-born babies will come from their parents, however once someone reaches the age of 40, the shape of their face will be made by how they lived their lives. Thus, if you reach that age of adulthood, then you should be able to take responsibility for the choices you've made in life, that's what those words mean」(Yurikago Speaking)「It's similar to the words said by Mother Theresa」(Taiyou Speaking)「In her scenario, it's about looking towards the future」(Yurikago Speaking)「Indeed」(Taiyou Speaking)

「Yeah」(Yurikago Speaking)

Yurikago cut their conversation for a little while, and after letting out a sigh she continued.

「Therefore, I plan to thoroughly take care of my face. Although only my face」(TL: "Every man over forty is responsible for his face." these are the exact words as quoted from Lincoln, the story goes when he was advised to hire a certain man in his cabinet, he refused even though that man could have been a valuable asset. The moral of the story was not the fact that he found the man's face ugly, but his features showed Lincoln that the man had an ugly personality and a bad disposition)「Ahh, so you are saying that a person's face can reflect their personality, right?」

Coming this far into the conversation, Taiyou finally understood what she was trying to say.

「However, in reality as well as metaphorically, a person's attitude will remain the same for their whole life」(Taiyou Speaking)「I know that…..」(Yurikago Speaking)

Yurikago lets out a sigh and hangs her head down in dejection. Taiyou could somehow feel grace from her small gesture, and it reconfirmed his beliefs about her being an Ojou-sama from a well-off family.

「Are you that unhappy that I managed to expose your true colors?」

「That much is obvious, but」

「But?」

「More than that I am disappointed in my own worthlessness. If I take the words of Lincoln to heart, I loathe myself who is unable to see my own true nature」

「That is being a little too harsh on yourself isn't it?」

「……」

Yurikago refuses to comment on Taiyou's words as she turned her body away, she sealed her lips and stayed quiet after that.

She doesn't want to say anything more, there was an implicit nuance and Taiyou could read it from her body language, so he also felt no need to pursuit the matter any further.

Knowing anymore about her background, at least in this place and the things they were about to do from here on out, was irrelevant to the task at hand.

What was the most important thing to Taiyou right now, was achieving his objectives and the means to achieve it.

Yurikago has the intentions of obstructing the『Blood Soul Plan』. That was also the main objective that Taiyou wanted to accomplish, and Yurikago's true colors had no influence that would affect the matter in a negative way.

Even if he took the presumption to its limits and said that Yurikago's true nature was a 700 year old vampire, or a Martian who came from 100 years in the future, all Taiyou wanted out of her was the fact that she planned to obstruct this project together with him, so that he could regain peace for the three sisters.

Thus, Taiyou decided that he did not want to overstep his boundaries. Having pointed out her true colors, was only because it flowed naturally into the conversation, and he just went with the flow.

He was the kind of guy, which would not ask about it, if a woman did not wish to speak about it. The atmosphere inside the room was becoming a little heavy, Taiyou was still continuing to earnestly gather up experience points.

Before the beginning of the operation, he still had some time left. Until then, if it was possible he wanted to raise at least 1 or even 2 levels.

Pasa, Shuru, Pasa Shuru. (sfx of him taking his jacket off and putting it on) He continued to whole-heartedly perform his actions, suddenly Hera who was keeping silent watch until now suddenly burst into a dance.

It was the level up dance……He wasn't really sure if that is what the name of the dance was but, it was the movements he has seen Hera do many times in the past.

Taiyou silently nodded towards her. Before they came into this room, they already predetermined how they would communicate silently with each other.

As per usual, a huge torrent of figures flowed into Taiyou's brain.

Taiyou became Level 6. His strength value rose up to 42, just as he wished, the fighting power he wanted to increase was definitely higher now.

(Just how strong is a strength value of 42?)

Naturally he had a little bit of doubt.

When his power was at 30, he was already able to bare-handedly pulverize a concrete wall and manage to snap off a steel sword. In this case, just how crazy would a value of 42 be?

He thought that he needed to experiment and find the answer some time in the near future.

Taiyou gave Yurikago a quick glance and she turned her back towards him. Confirming that Yurikago was looking away, he quickly turned towards Hera, and mouthed out the words.

「What–is–the–next–method—to—gain–exp?」

Although his facial expressions were a little strange because he wasn't able to just speak the words out loud, the message was conveyed successfully.

Hera was just vacantly staring at him momentarily, before long she understood his words.

「Tayiou-chan you still want to continue～? Didn't you just level up moment's ago～? 」

「Continue」

「Is that so, I understand. Umm, the next thing is～」

Hera flew towards the window. Though she passed by Yurikago on her way to the window, her existence was completely concealed from Yurikago so she showed absolutely no reaction.

「Over here Taiyou-chan, you need to come here～」

Taiyou headed towards the window side in silence. Taiyou also passed by Yurikago, but this time she was looking at him with suspicious eyes.

He disregarded her gaze and stands next to Hera.

「It's here～」

He silently watches Hera and gave her a questioning look "Exactly what am I supposed to do here?".

「Open the window, and then afterwards you need to close it. And after you

closed it, open it up again～」

Hera was explaining this to him with a smile.

When he first met her, Taiyou would often object to the ridiculous things Hera made him do and this would unnecessarily prolong his experience gain. Since the time he was made to dig up holes, this is the sixth kind of method in which he needed to perform to gain experience.

After coming this far, he realized that the actions he would have to perform would be ridiculous, and most likely all of the actions Hera would give him hereafter would seem like a “futile” actions.

Piling up those blocks, before smashing them down.

Digging up a hole, and then burying the hole.

Turning a coin repeatedly from heads to tails.

Taking off the jacket and then putting it on again.

And, opening a window, and then closing that window shut.

It was filled with pointless actions, and the one thing that was consistent was that they were all very repetitive laborious work.

Taiyou who was getting accustomed to being thrown into these types of situations, barely had any energy left to give a rebuttal towards Hera and just accepted the situation for what it was.

With the aim of reaching Level 7, Taiyou was accumulating his experience points.

Garagaragara, Garagaragaradon! (Sound of window opening and closing) The window is opened, the window is closed shut. The moment it was fully closed, he opens it up and then closes it again.

If someone was to watch him do such a thing, they would start to doubt his sanity.

Naturally, Yurikago was starting to become worried.

「You, what are you doing?」

「Please don’t mind it」

「You got a sickness of some kind?」

「The more I close this window, the stronger I become……..Please just think of it like that」

「You aren't even drunk…..」

Garagaragara, Garagaragaradon!

Whilst replying to Yurikago in a forced smile, Taiyou continued to open and close the window.

Hera was smiling radiantly as she watched Taiyou, but for somebody like Yurikago who had no idea what he was actually doing, she started to knit her eyebrow more and more.

「Hey, that is really annoying, don't you think you can stop it?」

「Even if I tell you that I will surely get stronger doing this?」

「That's a load of Bull—」

Yurikago was about to deny him, and Taiyou looked towards her over his shoulders.

She swallowed her words, looking at how serious of an expression Taiyou actually had on his face, she hesitated a little.

「……..Seriously? 」

「I can say with confidence that if you don't see me getting stronger during the mission, I will gladly let you call me an ambulance to go straight to the mental hospital……Would this answer of mine be sufficient to convince you? 」

「You are really similar to Sakura」

「Didn't you also say previously that we were alike」

「Ugee…….」 (Ack)

Getting it straightforwardly pointed out to her, she had an unpleasant face.

「Well, even if I say this, it doesn't mean that you are similar to Sakura」

「That is obvious, I can't stand being compared to such a person」

She spoke about Sakura as if she was spitting out poison, and then she looked

straight at Taiyou again.

「Will you truly get stronger doing that?」

「It's true」

「In that case, I will endure it」

「I am grateful」

「It's not like I can complain, the person I am trying to make use of is, increasing his own utility value for me」

「Isn't it praiseworthy?」

Yurikago let out a smirk, and then she turned her face and body away from his direction.

Although it was good to communicate solutions in a practical manner like he did with Yurikago, on the opposite end of the spectrum, he also did not dislike the conversations he shared with Sakura even if it was slightly more theoretical and roundabout.

Even whilst thinking about such things, Taiyou continued to increase his pace of opening up the window and closing it.

And by the time that the plan was about to be set into motion, and the strategies were about to be discussed.

He had already reached Level 7 and his strength value became 51.

Chapter 31: The Unmindful Princess

Chapter 33: Blood Energy ～ Blood Soul

Chapter 33

Chapter 32: Lincoln

Chapter 34: Transparent Loli Baba

The window was opened and closed at a rapid pace, Taiyou had reached level 7. right at this moment the power he needed the most had been gradually increasing, Just before he left the hiding area, he used two of his fingers to grip on the metallic window frame, using merely his thumb and index finger he crushed the metal frame like it was butter, that was the kind of power he obtained thus far.

After checking his abilities numerous amount of times, he decided that this “power” could also be referred to as “physical strength”. In other words, there would be a direct correlation between his hand grip and his physical strength.

He had the physical strength that could crush rocks and bend metal, in addition he also had a specific ability which allowed him to nullify all long range attacks.

Those were the two abilities he possessed at the present time.

Even so, Taiyou was not able to fully feel relieved. According to what Hera told him, if and when he reached level 10, he would be able to acquire some other new skill, if possible he wanted to raise his level to that extent, but it couldn’t

really be helped, there was just not enough time at this juncture.

He remembered back to when he had to choose a skill at level 5, if at that point in time he chose “Super Armor” instead of long distance immunity, this probably would have been much more compatible with his current fighting style. Considering that he had a vast knowledge in terms of gaming skills and their effects from playing numerous games, if he had “Super Armor” he probably could have become an indestructible force that would dominate in close quarters combat.

Although he wanted to go back and change his decision…..

(I suppose it’s useless to complain about the things I will never have)

He quickly gave up on that thought, and decided to make do with the abilities he already acquired.

The hour hand of the clock approaches 12 am, and changes into a completely new date.

Taiyou and Yurikago went out of their hiding spot, and started to go near the research facility.

They were concealing themselves in the shadows of the research facility, the two people were facing each other as a dim street light shone on their faces.

「Then as a last precaution, allow me to review our victory condition before commencing the plan」

「”the victory condition”, these are words you would not normally use」

「Well aren’t you a gamer? I thought that if I used those words, it will become easier for you to understand? 」

「Well I suppose so..」

Taiyou let out a forced smile.

It wasn’t like she said that he couldn’t understand unless she talked in “gamer terms”, but she was definitely implying that he was nerdy enough for her to want to use such terms to make him better understand.

「Anyways, let me continue on with the victory condition, alright? There are

two conditions, and if neither is fulfilled it will all become useless–」

After saying such a thing, Taiyou was slightly taken aback. Taiyou was looking at her gaze in order to discern her intentions and he quickly grasped the situation.

「Ahh, Alright. What you are saying is both conditions are of extreme importance and both must be fulfilled, right? 」

「That is the case. Then let's go over the first condition. We need to sneak into the facility, and establish a connection with their terminal to an outside network, we then need to take a part of the essential information within the system and take that home with us」

Yurikago put up her index finger to signify that she was referring to the "first" step.

「A part of? Why don't we just take all the information we can get? Ahh, is it because the terminal is not connected to the internet, so it is impossible to do so? 」

「No, that's not the problem」

Yurikago lets out a mischievous smile.

「I plan to leak out the stolen information to mass communication services, the thing is, leaking out a bundle of massive information isn't really efficient, instead it is much better to give out the juicy pieces of information in order to incite public outrage」

「What you mean is……」

Taiyou places his hand on his jaw, and takes on the thinker pose.

「So for instance, when there is some sort of cheating scandal with a famous celebrity, you only have to release information about the newest guy. When the media lets out information that is exciting, yet doesn't disclose all the information. At that point in time, the people will be driven to find out what happened in order to get the latest scoop」

「I see, however, what is the difference if we just let out all the information? Isn't the results…. going to be the same regardless? 」

「There is a considerable difference, the motivation of the public is also important to consider. It is all for the purpose of creating a small spark, and blowing it into a big flame」

「…….I see」

Taiyou nodded slightly, although he doesn't understand all the subtleties of what she said, he just accepted her word for it.

Yurikago extends her middle finger, to signify the "second" condition, and she made a V-sign.

「The second condition, when we begin our escape, I need to be able to get out of the facility by any means necessary 」

「Hm? Isn't that obvious?……」

「This isn't something trivial」

Yurikago cut Taiyou off in the middle of his speech and looked at Taiyou with a serious face.

「I'm not talking about the fact that my life is precious. I am not even saying that I need to get out unharmed, the fundamental thing is that I need to erase my presence from ever being within that facility」

「What is this about?」

「I will go as far as saying that in the worst case scenario. Rather than getting caught by them, I want you to kill me, and completely destroy my corpse so that it will not be distinguishable」

Yurikago spoke this with a cold-heartedness.

It seemed as if she was trying to confirm whether Taiyou could do this for her, but he did not answer her back.

Hearing such savage words come out of her mouth had obviously made Taiyou speechless. Although she prefaced it by saying that it was not a trivial matter, he did not expect for her to actually go that far.

「Is that clear? Keep these two conditions always in your mind, as we commence the mission. Then, let's begin the—-」

「Wait, just hang on for a second」

「What?」

Yurikago puckers up her eyebrows, and it seemed that she was getting a little irritated.

「Those words you just said…….Why does it have to be like that? I mean I understand why you wouldn't want to hand yourself over to them, and I won't question you for that decision, however, I can't comprehend why you would rather be killed in the worst case scenario」

「Asking this kind of thing, what do you expect me to say? Besides is there even a need for you to know about such a thing? 」

Yurikago gave a fierce and cold counterattack, which nearly caused Taiyou to lose his words again, but this time, he recovered at once and spoke back.

「There is」

He answered back clearly.

「I am but a mere high school student, Although I am not going to be selecting the "means" for this plan, and I want to accomplish my "objectives", but this task you have given…….The last task of potentially having to kill you with my own hands, this "means" is ridiculous. If you are asking for such a thing, than you are asking too much from me. If you are unable to tell me the reasoning for such a drastic measure, when the time comes for me to make a choice…….it will be impossible to not hesitate」

「Indeed, that may also be the case」

Yurikago closes her eyes, and lets out a small sigh.

「I'm sorry, I didn't take that into consideration. It's my mistake」

「No, I wasn't trying to place the blame on you or ask you to take responsibility —」

「I understand, in regards to that matter, I will take care of it myself when the time comes. When it comes down to it, you just have to make sure to get away as far away from me as possible so you don't get caught up in it」

「Wait!」

「What?」

「Don't give me that crap! What was that? Are you trying to tell me that when it comes down to it, you are going to take your own life?!」

「It is so, is there anything for you to complain about?」

「Obviously there is a problem, talking in that sort of manner……Saying that sort of thing, how could it be possible for me to calm down? 」

「Get over it. Even if I were to suicide… no, it's not even about that, is it? Let me ask you this, even if I did decide to take my own life, will there be some sort of conflict or disadvantage to your "objectives"? Or will you be hindered in some way? 」

「Indeed, if you are referring to my "objectives"……Then in that sense there will be no conflicts」

「In that case–」

Yurikago was about to declare her finishing statement, but Taiyou predicted her words and gripped unto her wrist. (sfx grip)

Yurikago's body temperature was transmitted to his palm.

At the same time, his mind kicked into overdrive mode and in an extreme way, his mind rapidly settled down and he felt his head cooling. Taiyou was originally a man who when he experienced a certain threshold of anger or sadness, those kind of strong emotions would suddenly be cooled and he would be calm. However this time around that calmness—was not the usual kind of detachment

he usually showed, this exceeded the boundaries of his normal reaction.

The thoughtless words she spewed out of her mouth in regards to “death” that unusual term which one would rarely hear about in ordinary life, really ticked him off. It was as if he became a third party that was looking down on the situation from above, watching both himself and Yurikago that was the feeling he had right now.

「Let me go」

「Then, you must first clarify‥. Why would it be necessary to go that far? What is the reason that you must be killed if push comes to shove? 」

「Like I said, what has that got to do with you?」

「It is not irrelevant any longer, If you won’t tell me what it is, then the worst case scenario may be that this plan will never succeed」

「You are so persistent, all you have to do is follow my plans, you don’t have to worry about anything else 」

「If you wanted something like this to be done, wouldn’t it have been better to just call Shirokiyami?」

「That’s true, if it was her, she wouldn’t have blinked for even a second at my request」

「I also think that is the case」

With her wrist still being firmly gripped, Taiyou nods his head.

「However, you asked for my help」

「So you are saying, I have to tell you?」

「It was your own mistake to assumed that I wouldn’t demand for an explanation. It will be necessary for you to pay for that mistake」

「……..And If I don’t want to speak? 」

「I already said this before, but I am merely an ordinary person. When an emergency situation arises, I will place my life on the line if I have to stop you from killing yourself」

「Stop?」

「That's right. That is to say, you will not die, because I will protect you」

「……」

Yurikago has a frustrated expression whilst staying silent.

The silence flows, and both Yurikago and Taiyou just stood there as they stared at each other for a little while.

In that kind of body pose, the two people were glaring at each other.

It was likely that her circumstances really had no bearing or negative effect for Taiyou, nor did it relate to being able to successfully save the three sisters from harm.

Even still, Taiyou could not help but hear the reason. If there came an emergency situation, there was no way that he could just abandon her and run away by himself.

No matter what, Taiyou was resolute in making her answer this question.

「How about I answer that question for her instead?」

Suddenly, whilst the two people were still staring at each other, a voice came out from the side. Although the mysterious voice seemed to be young, there was a clear will and determination which flowed out.

When he turned around. The figure of a little girl, who was stark naked and only being wrapped in silk, was standing in front of him.

Chapter 32: Lincoln

Chapter 34: Transparent Loli Baba

Chapter 34

Chapter 33: Blood Energy ～ Blood Soul

Chapter 35: Loli Kiss

First he was doubting his eyes, then he was doubting his consciousness.

That was how bizarre the appearance of the person in front of him was, he didn't know whether she was real, and if he could even touch her or not.

Her height is around 130 centimeters, she had a baby face and a bobbed haircut. It reminded him of the zashiki warashi. (TL: Zashiki-warashi is a Japanese demon, known as a yokai) The clothes she was wearing was a see-through one piece dress, and it would seem that she wasn't wearing any undergarments. Additionally, she was in a pose that generously showed off her body.

Although she looked like a little girl, she had a very promiscuous pose.

Seeing such a person in front of him, it couldn't be helped that Taiyou was feeling embarassed.

「What's the matter? You are staring at me so much. Do I look so adorable, that I've made you want to give me some candy? 」

「If I start giving out candy here, this will clearly tick the children crime box! Also stop calling yourself adorable! 」

「Hm? But I am Cut—」(Cute)

「Like I said, please don't say it!」

Taiyou lets out a large voice, and interrupts the little girl's dialog.

「If you connect those two things, a bad thing will happen」

「How difficult, I thought that this kind of expression was universal. The Japanese language is gradually becoming more inconvenient」

「There is no connection with Japanese. If you really want to call yourself adorable, at least use the correct first person pronoun to refer to yourself. To begin with, why are you using "Washi" to refer to yourself? 」(TL: she is using the words わし(washi) this is a term is a normally used by elderly males to refer to themselves)

「But I am using the correct first person pronoun which corresponds with my age」

The little girl, tilts her head in an adorable manner.

「Corresponds with your age?」

「Umu, It corresponds with my age. For a woman of my age it's obvious that I would use『Washi』or『Ore』to refer to myself.『Atashiya』is another way I can refer to myself, but it makes me sound like a weak and frail person」

「Ore…….Atashiya…….? 」

She pointed out three different ways in which she could refer to herself in first person. Taiyou started to think for a while, after seeing how casually the little girl referred to herself in Washi.

Suddenly, he began to connect the dots.

Washi, Ore, Atashiya. He started putting the pieces of the puzzle together, and realized that all three ways to refer to herself could be used by an older aged woman. In other words, when she said these were the words suitable for her age, it was implying that she was an old woman.

Inside, she was an old women, yet her looks seem to be a young little girl.

A very young looking old woman.

Suddenly, a word that existed within Taiyou's head floated across his mind.

—Loli Baba. (**Illustration: Loli Baba**)

Although the external appearance is that of a young girl, the mind and soul……..the inner workings of the person were at an advanced age. In recent years, people have started to call such a girl the "Beautiful Witch", But Taiyou understood it intuitively, and if he had to choose between the two words, Taiyou liked to refer to these girls as the "Loli Baba".

Is she truly a Loli Baba?…..As such thoughts passed his mind, he received another flash of inspiration.

It was in regards to the female limitation Sakura talked about, after growing up normally to the age of 10, their aging would stop and they would retain their youthful looks for the rest of their lives, although their internal organs would still continue to age and grow weaker which would inevitably lead them to die, looking young.

「Are you one of those girls? The "Eternally Little"…..?」

「Umu, Some might also refer to me as an unsold old housemaid」

「Orudo……?」(TL: he's saying old)

Taiyou was puzzled due to hearing words he was not accustomed to hearing He understood from the flow of the conversation that this was some sort of way to refer to her, but the meaning of her words were unable to be understood.

He intuitively understood the meaning of Eternally Little as a way to describe her being small for all eternity, but he didn't understand how that related to her being an old housemaid.

Whilst Taiyou was still looking doubtful, Yurikago slipped herself into the conversation.

「Azumaya Kohaku, What are you doing out here with that kind of appearance?」

Yurikago knits her beautifully shaped eyebrows, she really seemed to have an unpleasant face. It would seem that Yurikago knew the true colors of the young looking old woman standing in front of her, as she called her by the name

“Kohaku”, however, just like Taiyou, Yurikago was also doubting why she was out here with that kind of appearance.

「Umu? This is my everyday clothing, is there a problem? 」

Kohaku, lifts up her see-through skirt as she answers. Although she raised the hem of her skirt to the very limits before revealing her crotch area, to begin with it was already transparent so it wasn’t like anything changed.

「You are telling me, that’s your everyday clothing?!」

「That’s right. These clothes are really comfy, they feel great on the skin, and it’s really easy to move around in. During Spring and Summer I always wear these clothes, is there something weird about them? 」

「Of course it’s weird, to go that far and disregard the normal standards of clothing is being ignorant of the fundamental point」

「The fundamental point, what’s that?」

Kohaku tilts her head in puzzlement. Yurikago was just staring at Kohaku.

「Your external appearance. Wearing such transparent clothing and appearing before a man…….As a woman aren’t you the least bit ashamed of yourself?」

「Kukuku, For a woman who exceeds the age of 80, calling me a woman is inappropriate, you would do well to remember this fact」

Kohaku says this whilst giving a chuckle under her breath. Taiyou took a little bit of time to process the information.

「80?」

「Umu, Allow me to reintroduce myself. My name is Azumaya Kohaku, you may call me by Kohaku-tan, if you so wish. If you are willing to call me by “Kohaku-tan” then I shall permit you to pant whilst you cling to my behind, how about it?」(TL: “-tan” is another version of “-chan” (which is another informal way to address: female family members, lovers, close friends, intimate friends).

「As if I’d call you that?! And who would do such a thing?!」

「By the way, when you call my name, I will be counting on you to imagine my name in Hiragana」(TL: her name in Hiragana means Amber. Basically, she want’s him to imagine her name as: Beautiful, Soft and sticky, hue hue read comments for more info)

「Like I said, I ain’t going to call your name like that!」

「That is such a shame. Although I may look like this, I am a fully-fledged grown woman biologically speaking」

「Yeah I can see that already!」

「Then allow me to tell you something you may not be aware of. This year since the date of my birth, I am approaching the age of 87」

「87 years old? You were born 87 years ago? 」

「That’s right」

「……..During the Taishou Era? 」

「Are you an idiot?」

「It’s regrettable but I was born in the Showa Era」(this is 1926-1989)

Showa period. He spoke the words as if reciting them, he looked at her in amazement as he became at a loss for words.

「What, it seems that you still don’t understand?」

「That’s…..To be expected isn’t it? I mean you started talking about the Showa Era. If you told me you were born in the Heisei Era, then I would be convinced but this is….」 (Heisei Era: 1990’s)

“To think that you were born such a long time ago”, Taiyou refrained from speaking out such words.

「Umu, will it be easier for you to imagine it if I told you that I was born in the same time frame as the time the Aircraft Carrier Akagi was made?」

「It won't! And why are you suddenly talking about Aircraft Carriers? 」

「That game was so wonderful, it brings back such nostalgic memories one after another……It makes me feel as if I was in some sort of class reunion」

「That kind of thing is not a game!」(TL: Aircraft Carrier Akagi is a reference to the Kantai Collection game Kancolle, contributed via members in the comments section, ty guys ! Although it is also a real Imperial Japanese Navy AKA the "Red Castle" it was built in the 1920's hence the same time frame in which Kohaku was born)

Taiyou cuts off the conversation she was making and once again took a good look at Kohaku.

She really didn't wear anything down there, she was a young looking old woman who was wearing a transparent see-through one piece silk dress. Her appearance seems to be somewhere around a 10 year old girl, however she claims to have exceeded the age of 80, she also speaks in an elderly way.

Taiyou just couldn't put his head around such an existence.

Whilst thinking such things, Yurikago began to talk to Kohaku once again.

「Hey, aren't you going to change out of that? I already understand the fact that you are an old woman deep inside, but we have a beast with us right here」

「What do you mean by calling me a beast Oi!」

「It means that you are a Lolicon」

「I ain't a Lolicon, alright?!」

「Fu～n(exhale), is that so? But you also made the youngest of the three sisters into one of your lovers, right? 」

「Uuu」

Taiyou didn't know how to answer back.

The youngest of the three sisters— Kazane had the same face as her two other sisters but in terms of her height and her physique, she could be compared to a

grade-schooler. Honestly speaking rather than wearing her school uniform, it would suit her externals more if she wore a yellow hat and a red backpack.

Because it was true that the girl named Kazane did exist, Taiyou couldn't really object immediately to the disgrace of being called a Lolicon.

「Hou? Thou are a Lolicon? Well I don't particularly have any qualms with that, after all a high school kid like you who is still wet behind the ears, probably has a lot of "frustrations" that he needs to take care of」

「You talk big for someone who is classified as an old housemaid」

Yurikago spoke back towards Kohaku in an amazed tone. Taiyou could only hear words which he was unaccustomed to hearing, and he could not pinpoint her exact intentions in all of this.

「Kukuku. Well then shall we return to the subject at hand? 」

「The real issue?….Ah, Yurikago's plan」

「Yurikago?」

Kohaku has a dubious expression on her face as she repeats the name and looks towards Yurikago.

「Are you going by such a name?」

「Is it bad?」

「For being able to make someone cooperate with you without even telling them your real name, you have my admiration. Although a true Japanese person would be introducing themselves honestly and take more responsibility of their actions」

「That kind of thing is an old tradition from a cliched era」

「Ahh, As I thought, Yurikago was an alias wasn't it?」

「That is correct」

Kohaku declares so whilst looking at Yurikago.

「If she won't tell you herself what her name is, allow me to tell you in her stead」

Yurikago falls silent whilst being astonished at Kohaku, seeing she wasn't going to speak any time soon, Kohaku turns towards Taiyou.

「In that case, It seems that I will be the one to tell you her name」

「Ah, ahh……」

「Her name is Junishima Youran, she is the Junishima clan's "Princess"」

Taiyou did not anticipate that she would be from the Junishima clan. Taiyou rapidly turned around to face the girl with the twin-tails and looked at her in completely shock.

Chapter 33: Blood Energy ～ Blood Soul

Chapter 35: Loli Kiss

Chapter 35

Chapter 34: Transparent Loli Baba

Chapter 36: My Heroine wouldn't have Rape Eyes

「Junishima Youran?」

Taiyou repeated the name he just heard from Kohaku.

And he looked towards Yurikago, she was glaring at Kohaku with a face full of displeasure. Seeing her in such a bad mood probably meant that what Kohaku said was the truth.

In other words, it was her real name.

When Taiyou was thinking about what could be wrong with having such a name.

He suddenly realized something.

「Having the name Junishima, are you perhaps a relative of Sakura?」

「Junishima Sakura? Umu, I heard that they were half-sisters born of different mothers. Sakura wasn't born from a legal wife nor was it from one of the concubines, she is apparently a child born from a mistress」

「Is that so?」

「Who cares about such a thing」

Youran brushes it off as if it was something really trivial.

「Is that so? No hang on a minute, if you and Sakura are sisters, then why are you trying to hinder her plans? Is it because she is your half-sister? 」

「It can't be explained in such a simple manner」

Youran let's out a sigh and displays an expression of resignation.

「You, how much do you know about the Junishima clan?」

「…….To put it bluntly, it's to the level that I don't even know how to write the name. Sakura has mentioned that it was a way of writing that was an unimaginable, and it was writing Island twelve times in a row『Shima, Shima, Shima, Shima, Shima ,Shima, Shima, Shima ,Shima, Shima, Shima, Shima』」(TL: Juni= twelve, Shima= islands)「Kukuku, To come up with something like writing Shima twelve times, what an interesting way of thinking. If that was truly how it was supposed to be written, I wouldn't be surprised if it appeared in the Guinness book of records. That's because the longest family name in the history of this country is at best 5 characters」(Kohaku speaking)「Then how do you write it?」

「It uses the character『双』from the first part of the kanji for "twins", the Chinese numeral for『六(six)』and lastly the kanji for『島(Island)』, combined together it is『双六島』」

「Pair…….Six……Island. Ahh, so because there are a pair of two sixes, it totals to 12. Indeed, if you weren't told how to write it directly, it would be hard to reach such a conclusion by yourself. To be frank, after seeing the characters I assumed that it was read as "Sugorokushima"」(TL: Sugoroku 双六, is a traditional Japanese board game played with dice)「Well Japanese family names are often derived from geographical locations」(TL: some examples: Yama= mountain is very commonly used by Japanese people or Mura for village etc)「Ahh, In the case of Westerners, they have a lot of their family names based on occupations」(TL: example: James Baker, Fabbri =blacksmith, Chandler= candle seller/maker)「Even Junishima is a place name. In Japan the Junishima island is the third largest island located on the Sea side of Japan. Also, the Junishima family has been the landowner of the island for over 1000 years」

「Hee」

「And, I am a daughter from that family. So is that foolish woman over there」

「You aren't just a mere daughter, isn't that so?」

Kohaku chuckles as she says this.

「What do you mean?」

「She is born from the eldest son of the Junishima clan, this would mean that she is the next candidate who is supposed to lead the family as head of the clan, she kind of like a "Princess". She also has an official name she is addressed with by her subordinates」

「Hee……」

Taiyou leaks out a voice of awe, he didn't think much of her having an official name, but when it was mentioned that she was the rightful successor, he frankly thought that she was amazing.

Seeing such a reaction from Taiyou, Kohaku couldn't help but let out a smile.

「It seems that you have yet to fully understand the implications of this situation?」

「Hm? What do you mean? 」

「Allow me to ask, can you imagine what kind of place the Junishima island is?」

「That is….Isn't it an island, and it is the third largest island within Japan? …..Wait a minute, if it's the third largest island in Japan, just how big is the island? And you are saying that they own the whole thing? 」

「Finally you have begun to grasp the magnitude of the situation. Well in this case, although the mysterious size of the island is not a trivial thing, it is of secondary importance. The important factor to note is the population of the people on the island」

「Population?」

「Yes, the Village of Junishima. Over one million people live in that village, it is the most populous village in Japan」

「……Did you say one million people!?」

Taiyou gasped and he rapidly turned towards Youran.

The girl with the twin tails had a cold indifferent expression on her face. Although she didn't affirm the statements made she also didn't deny their validity, she had a look on her face which implied the truth in Kohaku's words.

「It can't be? How can there be a village with one million people in it? 」

「In this country there is no such thing as an automatic promotion of a village, the law of this country states that as long as the village doesn't apply for it, it will continue being classified as a village……Regardless of the fact that it has 1 million people living in it or 120 million people」

「So obviously the Junishima clan has purposely withheld from applying to fix their status, however why would they do such a thing?—-」

「Isn't this enough?」

Taiyou was about to further question the fact, but Youran interrupted their conversation with a firm tone.

「That kind of story, is unrelated to our current situation」

「I suppose so, the important thing to note is that Junishima Youran is the first candidate to be the person who will stand on top of these one million villagers and the one who gets to control them in the future. And the important thing to note is that. Although it may be called a "village", if all those people were to gather, the person who will stand at the top will have an extremely strong amount of influence. Being the village chief……Will naturally mean that person will have the most influence within their grasp. In other words, Junishima Island

is like a country within Japan, the village chief is akin to a sort of a king which rules a country」

「…….So, could it be that there is some sort of a power struggle? 」

「The correct assertion」

Kohaku grins whilst nodding her head.

「Although she is the first candidate of choice, it does not mean that it will be a peaceful road to obtain supremacy. If any sort of weakness is shown, it will be quickly taken advantage of in an instant」

「Is that the reason that, in the worst case scenario….She said such a thing」

「That's right. For this particular situation, no matter what she does it doesn't really matter as long as she doesn't get caught in the act」

「Even so, her corresponding action to not get caught is way too excessive…..」

「What do you mean by excessive?」

Kohaku was doubtful, and Taiyou told the words Youran said to him a few moments ago.

Kohaku was in complete agreement with Taiyou.

「It stands to reason. That she is probably the type of person to go to the extremes of being extreme」

「Is that so?」

「Umu, it's something that occurs often with her. For instance, right now she seems to be a man-hater, but if a man who she can fall in love with shows up, she will fall hopelessly and thoroughly in love, and she will be the type to give out her everything to that man」

「Just like that?」

「Umu, From her body, to her heart, even her wealth and power, everything will be given. That's the kind of hopeless girl I see her as」

「Stop talking arbitrarily me behind my back! I am not going to become that sort of a person! 」

Youran shouts out in a loud voice, and frantically denies the statements.

「Na(Hey), don't you think she's that type of person?」(TL: Kohaku is asking for Taiyou's opinion) 「Ahh…..I do get that kind of vibe from her」

「Why are you guys jumping to your own conclusions?! I'm telling you I am not going to become like that, okay?!」

「Yeah, all I can hear you saying is "Oh noo, I will never become such a thing" 」

「That's true, the more she tries to deny it, the more it seems that she's just trying to deny the truth」

「Stop making your own assumptions—」

Youran pouts and turns her face away.

「Aren't you interested in her? If you make her fall for you, you may just become the king of those one million people, you know? Ahh, by the way, when I said the word "fall" I meant the word "degenerate"」 (TL: Kohaku the perv, is basically saying, he should make her lose her mind like in those princess corruption games~) 「Why did you need to mention that specifically?!」

「It's my hobby」

「What kind of hobby is that?!」

「What do you say? If you want to do it, then I will give you a helping hand. And when it becomes successful, all you have to do is provide me with a little bit of compensation」

「By compensation, do you mean money?」

「Nope, for someone like me who do not many years left to live, such a thing is unnecessary. I also have no need for lands or power」

「Then, what is it that you want?」

「I want this—-」

Kohaku says this and suddenly started to lean over to Taiyou. The thin transparent dress she wore and the feeling of her smooth skin brushed up against Taiyou.

At the same time, an indescribably sweet smell tickled his nose and made his

heart skip a beat.

「What are——Nnnmuu!」

He was just about to ask her, but before he could speak, Kohaku already planted a kiss on him.

With such a sudden kiss, it could be said that there was no sign of this before it happened.

With his lips being enclosed, Taiyou was both astonished and perplexed.

After a short time, just like the time when he was kissed, Kohaku was the one who parted from him.

Whilst being totally confused, Taiyou was looking at her.

「Wh, what is……」

「I'm going to take the reward in advance」

「Payment in advance?」

「When the time comes, you can just give me another reward of the same kind」

「Nono, wait, wait wait……」

「What is it? You are being such a stingy man, aren't you? Are you trying to bargain down the compensation? 」

「No, that's not the problem」

「In that case, were you not satisfied with my lips?」

「Uuuu…..」

Taiyou was at a loss for words. It definitely wasn't unpleasant.

More than that, it was actually quite the opposite.

The feeling of her lips when she kissed him, and the rich fragrant aroma that drifted from her body smelled like a dribble of honey. And now she was finishing him off with her abandoned upturned puppy eyes look.

The result was that a fire started to ignite within Taiyou's chest.

It was a sweet-tasting kiss that made both his legs feel a sweet aching all the way to the base of his feet. Even if his mouth was torn apart, the words “not good”, it was not possible to say such a thing.

Just when Taiyou was at a loss for what to answer, Kohaku seems to have found something as she points her fingers at something.

「Umu? Hey, can you tell me what that is? 」

「That?」

Taiyou turns his gaze to where she was pointing and when he did, he let out a groan.

What was there, was the appearance of Hera who was supposed to keep silent in accordance to when Taiyou was among other people.

「It’s nice to meet you desuyo～, I exist for Taiyou’s sake, I am the Level up Fairy Hera nanodesu～」

[Chapter 34: Transparent Loli Baba]

[Chapter 36: My Heroine wouldn’t have Rape Eyes]

Chapter 36

Chapter 35: Loli Kiss

Chapter 37: Sexual Intercourse rate Five Percent

「Fumu? What is this about? 」

「Umm….?」

What the heck is going on? More like that was what Taiyou wanted to ask.

The level up fairy and the loli baba were staring at each other.

「Don’t tell me, you can see her?」

「If you are talking about that alien existence right in front of me, then yes I can」

「……」

Taiyou was in a state of blank amazement, and he was troubled at what to do.

Asides from him, Kohaku was holding on to her chin and was fixatedly staring at Hera who was floating in the air.

「Mysterious, it really is an odd appearance you have. With that kind of size, you definitely aren’t a human being」

「Aren’t you supposed to be more surprised?」

Taiyou was already worried at what to do, and he was puzzled at the reaction of Kohaku. For someone who just saw Hera's appearance—-the figure of a non-human fairy, her reaction was way too indifferent.

「Have you seen this kind of thing before?」

「No, This is the first time, I have seen the existence of a supernatural being. The reason I am not surprised is because I've seen plenty of weird things. When you reach my age, it's really hard to be surprised at anything」

「As expected of a loli baba nanodesu～」

「Umu, it seems you have understood」

「Ehmm, hello……」

From the side a nervous Yurikago can be heard.

When I turned to the side, I could see a mixture of a person's expression that was filled with both fright and puzzlement.

「You guys, since a while ago, what are you talking about……Who are you talking to? 」

「Umu? Yes please enlighten me, what is this all about」

Kohaku asks Hera for an explanation.

「The thing is desune, The only people who can see me, are people who have kissed Taiyou-chan desuyo～」

「Hou, what a pleasant story」

Kohaku's expression turned to that of amusement, and she fell silent.

Looking at her response Yurikago was becoming even more afraid and flustered.

「Wait, don't just go silent on me, please answer the question」

「Well…..Even if you wanted me to answer…..How should I put this? 」

Taiyou who was suddenly put on the spot truly did not know how to respond.

"If you have a kiss with me you will be able to see the fairy, how about it?"…..It wasn't like I could just say it that kind of thing with blatant honesty. Under

normal circumstances saying such a thing, will guarantee an ambulance of a certain color will show up and take you away.

However, at this rate, just trying to cover it up will not work out either.

When I was being hesitant, Kohaku who was in a deep sea of thought, suddenly raised an idea.

「Allow me to confirm, if somebody kisses his lips, without a doubt, they will become able to see you? Is there some kind of limitation to this? 」

「There isn't any～. Regardless of who it is, men and women of all ages, anyone who kisses Taiyou-chan will be able to see me desu～」

「I understand, alright」

Kohaku nods her head and walks towards Yurikago.

「Wh……what?」

「Umu, I was thinking of explaining everything to you from now on」

「If, if you want to explain it to me, can't you stand over there? Why are you coming…….so close to me? 」

「It's easier to do something rather than worry about it, in other words, it will be easier to explain if you just experienced it in person, rather than just using words」

「Experience it? Eh? What is this about? 」

「Oh yeah, by the way, what is your name?」

「Hera-chan nanodesuyo～」

「Umu. Then Hera, please restrain his movements」

「Roger that～」

Hera gives Kohaku a salute, she flies in the opposite direction away from everyone else.

It was an action taken in order to prepare for a speed boost, after taking about ten meters of distance she turned, and at an extremely great speed, she flew towards Taiyou.

「Wha—」

「It’s a revolution desuyo!〜」

Hera was rotating like a rifle. With such vigorous momentum, she was drilling towards Taiyou.

The fairy’s small body hits the defenceless Taiyou squarely in between his groins.

「Uguu——Y, ou…….」

Taiyou was crouching on the ground pressing between his groins. Taiyou who received a direct hit to his most precious jewels, was feeling the pain to the pit of his stomach, and he was fainting in agony.

「I’ve told you…….to stop……hitting me here…..」

「But, but Taiyou-chan, unless it’s a short distance attack, it wouldn’t work on Taiyoou-chan desuyo?」

「Li…ke…I…Said」

「Will this be good enough〜?」

Hera asked Kohaku.

「Nice jya」

「Wh, what is happening….?」

Though the details of what exactly is happening, is quite clear to Kohaku who can see Hera’s figure. For Yurikago, who cannot see what was happening, all she could see was that Taiyou was suddenly on the floor crouching and holding on to his groins,. Even as a joke she could not predict exactly what was happening, and she was getting the cold sweat just from seeing this baffling spectacle.

The fact that Taiyou did not seem to be acting, only further increased her bewilderment of the situation.

「Now then, the next person is you」

「Eh?」

「That’s right」

Kohaku suddenly stepped on Yurikago's foot with a Don! The moment Yurikago got stepped on, her whole body went numb for a split second as if electricity ran through it, with a start her body crumbles to the floor.

「Wh, what are you doing……?」

「Don't worry, this isn't one of my mysterious arts. I merely poked on one of your pressure points. When someone hits your elbow, you've experienced this kind of thing before haven't you? This is just an even more amazing version of that」

「Ohh, as expected of a Loli Baba desu. Such a knowledgeable Baba nanodesu～」

「I suppose you can say, that I am well versed in many practical matters. You are quite capable yourself」

「I learnt the technique in order to protect Taiyou-chan nanodesu～」

「I see, a woman who has someone to protect is truly strong as one would expect」

Hera and Kohaku was singing each other with praises on one side, and on the other end, both Taiyou and Yurikago received damage. They were both in a situation of being unable to move.

After praising each other for quite some time, they turned towards the two people who were on their knees.

「Now then, Shall we do it?」(Kohaku Speaking)

「What should we do desuka?」

「Make that fellow turn his face upwards nojya. If he tries to resist, I don't mind it if you give him one more blow. I mean, what's it to a young man like him, he should be full of resilience and recuperate in no time right? 」

「Roger～」

Hera salutes and slips underneath Taiyou's chin and pushes his face upwards.

Kohaku on the other end also turns towards Yurikagi and held her up supporting her by the armpit.

「Wh, what are you…..」

Kohaku didn’t say a word and just lifted her up. Although her diminutive body looked like it had a hard time carrying Yurikago for a second, it would seem that her waist was used well and she seemed to have a knack for carrying heavy things on her back.

And then, she brought Yurikago to where Taiyou was currently crouching.

「St…op….」

「Wai, wait! Wait! 」

Taiyou and Yurikago, in particular, Taiyou knew exactly what they were trying to make him do. Yurikago was unsure of the reason, but looking at the situation, she had a pretty good guess as to what they were planning.

Although they both tried to resist, their bodies which have not recovered from the damage they received was clearly unable to fight back.

And the two people had their heads held down, and were made to kiss each other by force.

「Mou! I can’t believe this is happening! 」

Finally regaining her freedom, Yurikago rapidly stands up and scrubs her lips with the back of her hands.

「What are you trying to achieve! Playing around with people’s lips like this?!」

「Kukuku, isn’t it fine like this? It’s alright, trust me」

「Ohh, its a Japanese AKUDAIKAN nanodesune〜」(TL: this is a reference to

Futari wa Pretty Cure Splash Star a spin off sequel animation, She is trying to say that Taiyou is an Akudaikan, which is an evil ruler who plans to capture the seven fountains. Or in this case the Seven Heroines)「I ain't an evil warlord–!!」

「Well, just calm down a little, your face looks like you were showered with kisses continuously for one month」

「It wasn't for one month!」

「If you were affectionately kissed for one month, what would happen ～? Taiyou-chan, will it be alright if you try it out on Kotone-chan and the other girls? 」

「You may also try it to me. I think my face would become like an enlightened monk jyaro」

「I think it will be like a bitch in heat! Surely～! 」

Yurikago was indignant. Her ability to move was taken away by force, as a girl who has already declared to Taiyou that she didn't really like him, her reaction of being unhappy was an expected outcome, however, she was so angry that she was missing the important factor.

「Hey, can I talk to you for a bit?」

To point it out, Taiyou called out to her.

「What? Let me just make this clear, but if you try to kiss me one more time, I will bite your lips off, okay? 」

「No, I wouldn't do those kind of things to you, or ever take you by force. It isn't about that」

「Then what are you trying to say?」

「You, do you realize that you have been talking to Hera for a while now?」

「Eh?」

「Yurikago became dazed and almost as if she became a robot, she turned her head with a (sfx gi gi gi mechanical sound) towards Hera 」

Unlike a little while ago, she clearly had a good look at Hera. The moment she verified Hera's appearance, her eyes gradually widened in surprise.

It was like she saw something completely unbelievable, it was like seeing something for the first time since she was born.

「Y..You…..」

「Once again, It's nice to meet you desuyo～. I am Taiyou-chans special Fairy, Hera-chan nanodesu～」

「Wh, what is going on?」

「With this it should be quite clear right? Only the woman who kisses this fellow will be able to see her jya」

「Even if a male kissed him, they would be able to see me ya know～」

「I'll say this right now, but rather than kissing with a male, I would rather crush their skulls in」

Taiyou exposed a face full of disgust.

If another beastly male were to kiss him, it would not be possible for him to accept.

「….Ahh I understand. So the thing a while ago was because such a mysterious thing was there」

In the beginning Yurikago was truly shocked, but as soon as she confirmed the existence of Hera, she rapidly recovered and was becoming calm and collected again. After being surprised, she was becoming really calm at a scary pace, she grabbed a small handgun from within her purse.

「So is this why, even If I do this, you will be completely fine?」

Whilst saying such a thing, she pointed her gun at Taiyou's groins.

Posun! (Fire) Right after the sound of gun fire resounded, the bullet sped up towards Taiyou's crotch at a rapid pace, however it quickly lost its power.

「Why the hell do you guys always aim at this location?!」

Taiyou roars. Unlike the time when Hera hurled herself into his crotch, the gun which shot a bullet straight to his groins did not even leave a scratch.

Chapter 35: Loli Kiss

Chapter 37: Sexual Intercourse rate Five Percent

Chapter 37

[Chapter 36: My Heroine wouldn’t have Rape Eyes]

[Chapter 38: Grade-schooler level of Command]

「Isn’t it fine, besides, this kind of thing won’t work against you anyways」

Youran replies to Taiyou whilst still having her hand on her firearm, the size seemed to fit right into the palm of her hand, and if one were to look closely at the materials it was white and metallic, and when it was shot earlier, there was barely any sound coming out of it, in all aspects it was a special man made weapon.

「What is going jya?」

Different from Youran who was finally convinced, Kohaku was surprised at the spectacle which occurred before her. There was little wonder, after all, when the gun was fired a sound to the extent of a person farting came out, and most importantly, the bullet which was fired at Taiyou’s private parts fell harmlessly towards the ground.

Having just been fired right in between his groins but acting nonchalantly as if nothing happened, it was impossible for someone to not be surprised at this development.

「I don’t really know the details behind it, but this fellow is seemingly immune

to projectile weapons. Pistol, Shotgun, Machine-gun, Rocket Launcher……I've seen him be impervious to these kinds of things」

「Was it like that? Well if someone were to come at me with a bomb, even I wouldn't know what would happen」

Well now that they have already found out this much, Taiyou felt there was no meaning to pretend being dumb anymore and he just admitted it obediently.

He remembers the events which occurred during the morning he went to the Junishima Mansion. At that time various firearms were being shot at him and the Rocket Launcher that impacted the ground near his feet caused a huge cloud sand to appear.

「I suppose that's true. So, bullets don't work on you?」

「If the best hit man in the world used his rifle on me, it might work」

Taiyou was cracking jokes, without shifting in complexion in the slightest, Youran just ignored him and looked the other way. As expected, it would seem that she didn't really enjoy these kind of conversations. She slides her gaze to Hera who was standing on the side and started to ask her.

「Is it true?」

「Yes ～, Taiyou-chan is immune to all long ranged attacks desuyo～」

「Hou, does he even possess such a strange ability? What a convenient thing jya」

「Is the reason he has his powers because of you?」

「It's because Taiyou-chan really worked hard desuyo～」

「Is that so. Long distance won't affect him, how about short distance attacks? For instance what if I were to slap him in the face, what would happen? 」

「Well the thing is ～」

In mid-sentence Hera flies towards Taiyou's groins.

「Why are you always aiming for this spot?!」

Taiyou grabs unto Hera and grips her tightly, and he threw her away in the opposite direction with all his strength. Hera was screaming out in a loud voice

“Ah～Ree～” as she flew away and vanished into the yonder.

「I see, I guess even just a little while ago, you were collapsed in agony」

「Uu」

「I understand, though all kinds of long distance attacks are nullified, if a direct close range attack landed, you would be just an vulnerable as anyone else jya」

「At that time when you threw away Shirokiyami into safety, you had full confidence in your power to survive the frontal attack, didn’t you? I also heard you mentioned that『Even if a nuclear bomb was launched at me, perhaps I would remain unharmed』」

「It would seem that you would live longer than a century jyano」

Youran and Kohaku was having a noisy discussion about his abilities, when he suddenly felt a staggeringly bad premonition.

It felt like he was slowly being stripped off all his clothes, by the two women, and more importantly, he felt like the discussion was going into a place where it cannot be allowed.

The two of them did not know of Hera’s existence until a little while ago. And now, even his skill had been exposed.

Both of them were very quick witted women, when information was given, one after another they would solve the pieces of the puzzle and it would spark more ideas.

「The reason why you would bring this man along, I have completely understood now」

「Me too, finding out that bringing him along was the right choice makes me feel relieved 」

「As for me, I am just so glad that the amount of people I can converse with has increased desuyo～」

Before he noticed it, Hera was already back and mingling with the conversation of the two girls. He was almost tempted to throw her away again.

「Now then」

After coming to terms with the topic, Youran had a serious look on her face.

「It is about time jya」

They were playing around a while ago, but now they were indifferent.

With the guidance of Kohaku, both Youran and Taiyou were being led into the research facility.

Kohaku used her biometric authentication to enter the building, and inside it was unpopulated, according to Kohaku's source of information, for some reason or other, the researchers had withdrawn from the facility from midnight till six o'clock in the morning. Inside the building however, the Eternal little who was cooperating with the researchers were still here somewhere.

Though it was obvious they were experimenting with them somehow, he didn't really know the particulars.

The certain thing was the fact that there was nothing else here besides the eternally little.

(I can't really see where the eternally little are…..Is it possible that there are still other things to discover here?)

They were walking along the building where all they could here was their own footsteps.

The woman who was leading them was still wearing her see-through one piece dress. Although at the start when he first met her, he was anxious about her appearance, Taiyou did not have any lecherous thoughts. However since she took advantage of him with the kiss, he started to see her in a different light.

To be precise, he became transfixed with her ass. It was completely transparent and he could see her buxom small ass from behind.

Somehow or other, her swaying hips were truly captivating and Taiyou felt that blood was rushing into his groin area.

At the same time, he felt a faint sense of guilt and he inadvertently turned his eyes away……..However, besides him Youran was there.

Youran was clearly glaring with scornful eyes at Taiyou.

「……Lolicon」

「—-tsu!」

Taiyou couldn't find any words to say, and his face reddened. After one moment, he desperately tried to object.

「D, don't call me a Lolicon! I don't have that kind of weird complex! Besides this person is way older than me, and instead of a Loli she would be—」

Taiyou was trying to explain his side of the story, and Youran only watched him with indifferent cold eyes.

「Why are you becoming to flustered? Normally you are so cool-headed. Don't tell me, did I hit it right on the mark? 」

「–Tsu!」

「Taiyou-chan are you a Lolicon desuka〜? In that case, what do you think about me 〜? 」

「You are out of the question!」

「Then are you saying, that Kohaku is within your sights? Are you aiming for her? 」

「No no, that's not what I meant」

At the rate this was going, he felt that he would be branded a lolicon, and he would have to bear the dishonorable shame.

As a man, it was the one thing that he did not want to bear. If he gets careless here, more so than wrestling in embarrassing pants, he would receive a big psychological damage.

Taiyou was completely caught out of guard, on the contrary Youran was calm and composed.

「Well, don't worry about it, I don't really care if you are a Lolicon or whatever, as it doesn't concern me. Since the start I've always disliked you, besides this fact won't change even now」

「I'm telling you it's a misunderstanding」

「Kukuku, Please don't fight over me」

Kohaku who was walking ahead of them stifled a laughter.

「You don't really have to add fuel to the fire you know!」

「Kufu, my bad. But since I've been born as a woman, I've always wanted to say such a line jya」

「Is that really so ～?」

「Umu, Well there are also a couple of other ones as well. For example『I want to drink the miso soup that you made』or『It's touching me, idiot!』or『Oi, can you grab it for me, you know that thing ?』or『 Even if you said that you disliked it, look at how wet this place has become』those kind of things」

「Hehh, so women actually have those kind of things that they want to say desune～?」

「Don't be fooled, that is obviously a joke or her own personal twisted hobby」

「Kukuku, it's been found out ? Well, they are all my personal desires jya」

「Are those kind of useless things your only ambitions in life?!」

「Well I suppose I can admit that they are worthless, after all they are all dreams that cannot be achieved」

「Dreams to fulfil?」

Taiyou looked doubtful and certainly amongst her six dialogs Kohaku wanted to say, he didn't really understand why she wanted such weird dreams fulfilled, however she could probably get away with the『It's touching me, idiot!』phrase.

As for the rest, he wasn't entirely sure what the heck she was trying to achieve by saying them.

「You know about how we are called the eternally little right? At same time, are you aware of the other term the "old housemaids"? 」

「Ahh, I have been curious about that for a while. I've heard people saying it before, but what exactly is this thing called the "old housemaids?" and what does it mean? 」

「Are you aware of the Old Maid ?」

「Ha?」

Taiyou leaked a stupendous voice. For a second, the topic changed and he thought that he had misheard what she actually said.

It was like you turned several pages of a book all at once, that kind of feeling.

「The old maids? Are you referring to the Old maid card game? 」

「Umu, Am I wearing any clothes underneath? Or am I not wearing any clothes, that kind of game nojya」

「That ain't the old maid card game, that's different type of card game isn't it?」

「Kukuku. Well the thing is. The old maid card game originally came from a game called the old housemaid game. It is a truly old game, the cards we used to play didn't even have the same shape as the one's we use nowadays, it was the times when jokers didn't exist jya. The object of the game is to not be the one with the only queen at the end. And the person who is left with the queen loses —」

「so granny…..You are an old maid? 」

「Exactly. Old maids are women who has remain unsold…..or another way to

put it is they are women who missed the marriageable age. We are the left over queen's jyayo」

「What a harsh way to put it」

「I suppose it is jya. Well, as you can see, we the eternal little have this sort of external appearance. Throughout my whole life, I will retain this youthful appearance. As you can see I appear to be too young and naturally there is no one who would desire me as their companion」

「Is that so? No wait, how about all the lolicon's out there–」

「If someone was to ask for my hand in marriage…. No even if they only became a companion, it would be good enough. In this society there is no one who is willing to confess that they are a lolicon to the world. As a man, there is rarely anyone who would want to burden the shame of being branded as such. Having the courage to proclaim that they are lolicon and losing their reputation, and having a lolicon complex is a completely different thing」

「……..」

「For us eternally little, the ratio to get married is roughly around 5%, that is a ratio of one in every twenty people. Other than that, it's about the fact that the man will continue to grow older. This kind of rumor spreads and soon enough, we the eternally little, were branded with a derogatory term of the old housemaids」

「Unsold stuff…. nanodesuka〜? 」

「Well as one would expect, with that kind of term attached to your name, not many people would want to be associated with it」

Hera and Youran joins the conversation.

After listening to Kohaku's speech, he went into deep thought.

Chapter 36: My Heroine wouldn't have Rape Eyes

Chapter 38: Grade-schooler level of Command

Chapter 38

Chapter 37: Sexual Intercourse rate Five Percent

Chapter 39: The Key to a Successful Harem

Whilst walking behind Kohaku, his feelings somehow became gloomy.

After listening to her talk, he finally understood her side of the story.

Don’t fight over me.

I want you to make miso soup for me every morning.

Oi, get that for me will you, you know that thing?

These dialogs were all about love, and the affection that she has lacked all her life.

For someone like her whose percentage to get married was one in twenty, it was natural that she would yearn for such a thing.

And, there was another thing that he understood.

To Kohaku who yearned for such things…..

「Then, you are…..」

「Umu, Even if I look like this, I am an energetic virgin jya」

Kohaku turns her neck over her shoulders and grinned.

Hearing her say such an embarrassing thing, Taiyou's face turned bright red like a tomato all the way to his ears.

「Please choose your words more appropriately!」

「By the way, my amniotic fluids never rots and throughout our whole lives, we the eternally little…..Retain our abilities to reproduce and become pregnant until our death」

「Like I said, please choose your words! Why are you suddenly going into such a weird direction?!」

「For an elderly person to not lose their ability to reproduce, it is truly a rare thing jya」

「Please consider the young people too!」

「Hey, you」

Youran speaks up and interrupts the comedy skit between the two people.

「Aren't you planning on being with those three triplets?」

「Eh? Ahh, that's what I plan to do」

「So, you are a lolicon, aren't you?」

「I have no intention of becoming one!」

Taiyou did not want to bear the burden of shame and he rebuked Youran with a loud voice, however Youran did not mind it at all and just proceeded with her reasoning.

「So, aren't you planning on creating a harem with them?」

「That is…. Well」

Taiyou reluctantly nods.

There was still a refusal feeling to the word harem. Or more like, he wasn't really sure yet, if what he had between them was a harem.

However, the fact that he wanted to be together with, Kotone, Suzune and Kazane was without a doubt his feelings on the matter.

That was really the only method when it came with the three sisters and

gradually he himself desired the three of them.

Therefore he nodded, then he nodded again and one last time he nodded to himself as if confirming his own beliefs.

「That's right, I do want to be together with them」

「So, in that case why don't you include her into your harem as well?」

「Eh?」

「Ohh, there was also this method desu」

「Increasing your harem members by just one, shouldn't be too much of a problem right?」

「Ehhhhhhh?」

The proposal was way too sudden.

Taiyou's scream of exclamation resounded in the building in the middle of the night.

Under Kohaku's guidance they arrived in front of a room.

The door in front of them was an imposing mechanical door.

「Well, then this particular door won't be activated with my level of clearance」

「Yes, please wait a moment」

Youran was fiddling around and she took something out. It was the kind of thing people used to protect their fingers when sewing, kind of like a finger condom.

「This is….?」

「It's a finger authentication system, and it's a relatively old-fashion security, apparently this door will open based on the finger print and in accordance with body temperature」

「Huh?」

「In the near future, there will probably be an update to the security system which will become a hybrid authentication system, but in that case, I will also be prepared to open it」

Saying such a thing, Youran passed the finger sack to Taiyou.

「Here you go」

「Eh? You are giving it to me? 」

「Use it on your finger, because before applying it we need to make sure it matches a human's body temperature. You, isn't your body temperature high? 」

「…….You seem to know a lot about me」

Youran was referring to the conversation she had with Shirokiyami in the past. He wondered just how much information this woman had on him, but for the time being Taiyou decided not to worry about it.

He puts on the fake finger print, and waits for the temperature to rise, and soon after, the party entered through the door.

Inside the room, there was several computer terminals. Youran stands in in front of one and started to operate the machine.

In the front screen, Taiyou felt like he knew many of the icons that were displayed on the computer screen.

「Unexpectedly the machine seems quite old」

「This, is just a dummy」

「Eh?」

「If I am not mistaken……『WWSSADADBA』is the input code……」

「What is that?….Ohh」

Taiyou was dubious but after she inputted the code, the screen completely changed with a poof.

Now the icons which were familiar to him all disappeared in a burst and what replaced it was a black screen which started to spell out white characters.

「Is this the command prompt…..?」

「That's right, and operating from here……」

Youran inserted a memory stick into the machine, and the clattering of the keyboard was heard. He remembered that she previously explained that this terminal was not connected to any networks, so it was imperative that she physically came here with a memory drive in order to steal the information.

Taiyou was keeping guard as she performed her work but suddenly, there was a glance from the side that he was worried with.

When he turned around, Kohaku was looking at him with sparkling eyes, at least that is what he felt.

For some reason or other, she seemed to be blushing, and she looked seriously cute.

「Umm…..What are you looking at? 」

「It, it's not like I'm looking at you or anything jya」

「Why are you suddenly acting so suspiciously?!」

After giving her a retort, Kohaku's body which was twisting and turning a moment ago, was standing in their usual firm position.

「That's weird, I had heard that nowadays the young men liked this sort of attention? 」

「I think that is questionably old fashioned!」

After he objected, she noted it with an "Umu", and then after nodding, she looked at Taiyou once again.

For some reason, this time around, she was staring at him intensely and was glaring at him.

「I'll, Kill you!」 (TL: Yandere mode activated?!) 「By any chance, are you giving

me one of those death stares with that kind of look?!」

「That didn't work? in that case how about—」

「Like I said, please stop it with this kind of behaviour, ya got mee?!」

「Your way of speaking the Japanese language got slightly impaired, young fellow」

「Whose fault do you think that is?!」

「Is it mine?」

「Who else could it be? Why are you so interested in these kinds of "dangerous jokes"? 」

「How odd, all I was trying to do was appeal my own loveliness, it didn't work?」

「Even if you didn't do such things, you are normally cute desuyo～」

Hera's whole face was smiling as she complimented Kohaku.

「Umu, Thank you. However, my cuteness, does not seem to be able to reach him jya. What shall I do, I wonder? 」

「Taiyou-chan is just antisocial desu, words are useless against him, I suggest that you take the direct approach, otherwise it won't work desu～」

「Hou?」

Kohaku's eyes, was glittering and shining.

「In that case, why don't you just stick your body next to his? If it's just oral, I can pretend not to see anything」

Whilst operating the terminal, Youran joins the conversation whilst looking at the screen. Her multitasking was pretty good, like being able to hold a conversation whilst driving a car.

「That is an ingenious idea desu. Now then Kohaku-tan, Ike ike, Go , go nanodesu～

「You guys, what are you trying to instigate here?!」

Taiyou raises his voice.

「If you want to have this kind of conversation, at least do it when the person in

question is not right next to you」

As he was saying that, Kohaku without caring in the slightest, leans against Taiyou coquettishly.

The atmosphere changes. It was different from before, and a gentle atmosphere was created as she snuggled into Taiyou's arms.

「Wha, wait…..」

「…..If it's me, do you dislike it? 」

「Eh?」

「I've heard you already made promise to take turns with the three women, then the principle of only having one partner will no longer apply to you right? In that space, is there none left for me?」

「Wh, what are you saying so suddenly?」

「I'm entreating you, jya」

「Entreating?」

「In other words, this is a close-out sale jya. I don't have much longer to live, however, this youthful appearance can be retained until my last breath. I think that right now, it's a very cheap bargain jyazo」

「Cheap….」

「Umu, I won't get jealous and I make any selfish remarks. Even if I only receive the warmth for one person, divided into four…..for me that will be more than enough jya」 (TL: omg what a pitiful loli baba T.T) 「……」

Taiyou was at a loss for words, the joking atmosphere which they had a few moments ago was blown away like the wind. It was completely replaced with this sweet, yet suffocating atmosphere.

Her dialog of begging him. Combined with the fact that she didn't have many years left to live, her frantic desperation was really transmitted to Taiyou.

Eternally little…..They were also known as the Old Maids. 95% of them remained "unsold", and even going as far as to refer to herself as a special bargain sale.

These kind of earnest things she said, truly made Taiyou's feeling waver.

「Kohaku-san…」

「……」

She was nestling into Taiyou's arms as looked up at him, her eyes were gently shut.

[Chapter 37: Sexual Intercourse rate Five Percent]

[Chapter 39: The Key to a Successful Harem]

Chapter 39

Chapter 38: Grade-schooler level of Command

Chapter 40: A Means to and End

For a while, Taiyou just stared at her.

The sweet atmosphere wraps around him and tempts him.

Even though the little girl in front of his eyes, looked to be 10 years old, he felt like it was also not right to call her an 87 year old woman either.

There was only one thing in his eyes……..She was just a girl.

Her pulse was transmitted to him, from the place where their skin touched skin.

Her pulse was warm, as if it was delivering her feelings right to him.

The strength and speed of the pulse continued to increase, it was the peculiar rhythm of a person who feels nervous.

Taiyou knew what it meant, in the past few days, he understood what that rhythm represented.

「……」

Because he understood, Taiyou broke off the atmosphere and he gently pulled

her body off him.

「You……?」

Her small face was raised, Kohaku who was waiting for a kiss expectantly opened her eyes, For a while, she just stood there and watched Taiyou's face in surprise, however before long, her pupils were dyed with the color of disappointment.

「Well, I suppose that's how things would turn out. For an old baba like me…….」

「That's not it」

Taiyou interrupted Kohaku's self-deprecation.

「In truth, my heart was beating really fast, regardless of your appearance, and regardless of your inside, nothing mattered and I was just in the moment……..and I wanted to do it」

「Then, why didn't you?」

In response to Kohaku's words, Taiyou shook his head slowly.

「I already, have three girlfriends. They are three women who think of themselves as one entity. I want to be honest with them. That's why, it isn't possible for me to accept you」

「However, I've heard that those girls wanted you to create a harem」

「That was just my own selfishness, and it is a thing that I need to clarify with them later on」

Taiyou looks straight into Kohaku's eyes as he continued to talk.

「Even if I wanted to get together with another woman, I would need the girls agreement, and also my own approval. ……In addition, if in the future more people are involved, I want everyone to consent before more are added to the harem. I want everyone to acknowledge and be together peacefully, I want to have that kind of relationship」

「……」

「That's why, right now I can't do it」

「Is that so?」

Kohaku nods her head and quietly parts from Taiyou.

「You are seeking a polyamory, aren't you?」

「Polyamory?」

Hearing words he wasn't accustomed to hearing, Taiyou tilts his head.

「Haven't you heard of these words being mentioned by the gay and lesbian community? Similar to their principles, when three or more people love each other, at that time, everyone's consent is necessary for the relationship to flourish, it's that kind of principle」

「Is there such a thing?」

「Isn't this the exact principle you just stated?」

「No, what I mean is, is such a thing prevalent in this world, or has it been done successfully before? I mean, I'm not too fond of gays or lesbians……but, there is a huge amount of people like them, right? 」

「Well, it isn't something that is remarkable. Even now, polygamy is known worldwide, or it could even be said that by ethnic groups, people who do polyandry exceeds 70 percent」(TL: polyandry, for those that don't know is a practice of one woman taking two or more husbands, AKA reverse harem) 「Eh?」

「Well, I suppose that is the magic of numbers, when I compare it to the population of the world, the number becomes 10 percent or less. This is because, the people who follow polygamy are still in the minorities」

「Ah, is that what you meant?」

「Let's come back to it. Hearing you talking about polyamory……..I've remembered a race of people who follow that principle」

Taiyou nods. Looking at him, Kohaku lets out a sweet smile. As if she was fascinated by him, it was a gentle smile.

「Then, I shall wait for you to get the acknowledgement of the girls. By the way, I will protect my chastity so please don't be worried」

「…….Thank you 」

「The one who should be saying thanks is me」

Kohaku was smiling contently.

He had a premonition, it was the hunch that Kotone and the girls would gladly accept Kohaku.

Even so, Taiyou wanted to hear their opinions first before making a decision. Taiyou wanted to stay true to his convictions.

However that “conviction” is one of the walls that stand in between Kotone and the girls, and Taiyou had not yet realised this fact.

「Nee nee, Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan～」

「What is it?」

「If, I get the permission of Kotone and the girls, will you also let me into your harem?～」

「Eh?

Taiyou was blankly staring at Hera, losing his words. He didn’t expect such a question so he lost his words.

「I mean, weren’t you talking about obtaining permission just now?」

「Well, I mean it was but……」

「Then, there is a possibility for me too desuyone?～」

「No no…….」

「When his lolicon complex is aggravated this is how he acts eh」

Whilst she was still operating the computer, Yurikago managed to sneak in some remarks.

「No, like I said, that's a misunderstanding」

「Taiyou-chan what's it going to be?」

「No for you I can't, if you really want me to say yes, at least become human sized」

「Uuu…….That is not possible nanodesuyo～」

「Then, please give up」

「Uuu…..I understand nanodesu～…….」

Hera withdrew tearfully. Seeing her depressed appearance, whilst, it did not suddenly invoke his love for Hera, it did cause him to feel pitiful, and he wanted to apologize for it.

Because the talk with Kohaku had reached a standstill, Taiyou stood up and walked next to Yurikago.

「What?」

「What's the situation?」

「It's going well, in a little while, the one that we need copied will be obtained. The evidence, that they were doing human experimentation of the socially vulnerable, 'Eternally Little'」

「And with this information, we will be able to stop them from aiming at Kotone and the girls?」

「Yes. If this is revealed to the public, all plans can be frozen according to my discretions. In such a case, no one will aim at the girls」

「What about the Eternally Little who are related to the experiments?」

「There is no problem in that department…..Regardless of the case, a huge amount of money will be paid to them in compensation for their hardships. Or more like, the situation will inevitably lead to such an outcome」

「……..I suppose so」

Taiyou was convinced.

「Oh?」

Suddenly, Hera opens her eyes wide, and faces the other direction. She was just staring at this one point in the wall……..as if she could see through what was behind it.

「What's wrong?–」

'Was there something?' Just as Taiyou was about to approach her and ask her this question.

「Alarm?!」

Youran, stood at attention, and turned her eyes. All the other people also had similar looks.

The whole room started to blink with flashing red lights, and a siren began to ring.

「What the hell is this?!」

「This is…….An alarm that informs others of any intruders」

「Did you say intruders?」

「What's going on, why is such a thing suddenly happening?」

「I don't know」

Kohaku says this, as she looked towards the computer screen.

「Is the data ready yet?」

「It's just a little more」

「Quick! If this keeps up–」

Before Kohaku even finishes her sentence, the screen cuts off with a poof, and the screen of the computer goes completely black.

「Ahh Geez! I was so close to getting it!」

「Pull out the memory drive! At least we got something, it should be fine!」

「I know already」

Yurikago violently extracted the memory drive that was inserted into the main body of the computer.

「Okay, time to escape」

「Follow me, there is a pathway that is not usually used connected to the outside. It's not as special as a secret passage, but the probability of encountering a person is considerably less」

Just like the way she guided them when they were walking in, Kohaku once again took lead to guide them out.

「Wait, what direction are you going in?」

Taiyou asks her making her stop. The pace of the flashing red lights begins to quicken gradually.

「Direction? If you are asking about that, then it's over here」

Kohaku answers, and points in the direction.

「And can you tell me which direction we entered from?」

「That is this way」

「……I see, By the way, this here is still the first floor right?」

「Umu……What do you intend to do?」

Kohaku was a little doubtful, Taiyou started to walk in a direction that was opposite from the two directions she pointed in.

He walked towards a white wall. Taiyou stood there and took a deep breathe.

「Uohhhhhhh!」

A shout resounded and the entire room shook, as he launched his fist towards the wall.

Dogon!

The place which had a white wall moments ago, now had a huge hole in which a person could easily go through.

Going into this room, Taiyou started to break the wall, towards the same direction.

Chapter 38: Grade-schooler level of Command

Chapter 40: A Means to and End

Chapter 40

Chapter 39: The Key to a Successful Harem

Chapter 41: I really wanted to hear those words

「You, what are you up to?」

「I'm creating an exit path」

After answering Kohaku's question, he went straight towards the wall and began pummeling it again to create a hole. He continues to puncture holes into the wall one after another so Kohaku, Yurikago and Hera started to follow after him.

「We don't have to do something like this, I can guide us to a secret passageway jya」

「This is just from my speculation, but…」

Taiyou makes an introductory statement.

「From the people that are chasing us now, I have a feeling that they already know that you have betrayed them. And if my hunch is correct, they will already be waiting at the secret passageway and the information you provide will prove fatal if we follow it blindly」

「Have you also considered the fact that Kohaku might be a double agent?」

Yurikago questions Taiyou. She is firmly gripping unto the memory drive with both of her hands.

「Ahh, in the case that she is, something will happen around this tim–」

「I have never thought such a thing」

「Eh?」

Though Yurikago was about to say something, Taiyou continued to break the walls down and spoke over her.

「That kind of possibility, doesn't even cross my mind」

「Wh, why?」

「……」

Taiyou could not answer her. He did not think he needed to answer her.

「Fufufuf～, as expected desu, as one would expect from my Taiyou-chan desu」

Hera flies next to Taiyou who was keeping silent, and she danced around and fluttered around him.

Taiyou swatted her away like she was some sort of fly, and Hera was unperturbed as she smiled radiantly dusting herself off and flying around him again.

The radiant Hera, the frowning Yurikago and lastly Kohaku who stood in silence as she gazed at his back.

Three people followed him and Taiyou smashed one last wall…….which was connected to the outside.

And when they got out of the building, they saw the 20 meter wall……..which was there previously. He runs up to the wall with a dash, and just like he has been doing, he used his powerful fist to create a breach in the fence.

Taiyou faces towards Yurikago.

「Go ahead of us!」

「Eh?」

「I will hold them off here, you go on ahead」

「What are you saying? I am—」

「A means to an end」

Taiyou interrupts her rebuttal. Taiyou had a stern expression on his face.

「You've told me that there are two conditions to victory, the first being getting that memory drive and the second is that your true colors must not be revealed to the enemy. In that case, what do you think is the most effective means right now?」

「……Attract their attention and then holding them off here, meaning that someone must remain」

「That's right, and right now, who do you think is the best person for such a job?」

「…….it's you」

「The correct answer. That's why, you should go on ahead」

When the facts were pointed out to her, Yurikago had a tortured expression on her face. It was obvious that her heart was wavering.

However, there was only one answer. Under such a limited situation, no matter how someone hesitates there is no other option than to accept the facts.

In the end, she could only concede to his plan.

「…….I understand」

「Hera, follow her as well」

「Eh?」

「Even if you are here right now, there is nothing much you can do, on the other hand, if you were to follow her, you can become her eyes and cover her blind spots」

「I understand desu」

「Alright, go!」

Yurikago looks at Taiyou one last time with the last remaining vestiges of reluctance before steeling herself and disappearing to the other side of the darkness beyond the hole.

「Well then, you should also……」

「Kukuku, I'm staying behind. No, I must stay behind」

「Mu」

「If both you and I remain here, it will buy more time for the rest to get away safely. In other words—」

「It will attract more of their men to stay behind?」

「Correct. Although with a hole like this in the wall, it is uncertain as to how many can pass through」

「Alright, but the person doing the fighting will be me, moreover if they take out guns, please do not hesitate to hide behind me as they will not work against me at all」

「Roger….That」

With that being said, the conversation between the two people came to a standstill.

Whilst waiting for the enemy to reach here, Taiyou and Kohaku was standing side by side in front of the hole with an imposing stance.

Before long, a huge amount of people surrounded them.

In front of the research facility, one man was taking along his subordinate.

He was wearing elegant glasses, and he was a young person wearing intellectual style of clothing where the tailoring was good.

He was one of the promising figures of the Junishima clan, Junishima Kaizen.

He was glaring at the facility, whilst listening to the report from his subordinate.

「Reporting, we have encircled each of the exit ways within the facility」

「Good, how about the concealed passage which we discovered from the information?」

「We have also completed the arrangements for that area」

「Well done」

Kaizen nodded at his subordinate.

「Have we been able to confirm who the perpetrator is?」

「Yes, using the monitor. We have managed to confirm that there is one man and two women」

「Is Sakura amongst them?」

「No, one of the females is the eternally little, and the other female seems like a normal……high school student she doesn't seem to have much restraint in her actions. Both their statures were different」

「I understand, So they didn't bring Sakura along, and hid her instead」

「What should we do?」

「What about the male?」

「It would seem, that he is the high school student who raided our residence earlier this morning」

「I see, It would seem that he is connected to all of this」

「Your orders?」

「Because I want more information, capture them alive」

「Yes, I will convey the message」

The subordinate moves slightly away from Kaizen, and begins to contact the group with a wireless radio.

Kaizen rolls up his glasses.

「Sakura-san…..」

He mutters whilst intently watching the facility.

During the day, the Juunishima Residence was attacked by the enemy.

There were two intruders, the first was an unidentified high school boy, however the other intruder was “Shirokiyami”.

She was a swordswoman who wielded the national treasure “Reverse Heaven”, although she was still in her teens, her strength was world renowned as one of the strongest.

Because of such an attack, his relative Sakura was kidnapped.

When Sakura was kidnapped, Kaizen immediately kept watch of all the projects Sakura was overseeing, moreover, it could be that the information about the facilities had been leaked by her and so it was infiltrated.

And when it came down to it, the facility did encounter infiltrators.

「However……What was their motives for capturing Sakura-san, were they trying to set up a trap or were they trying to gather information? Perhaps this was a planned attack? Well considering the situation right now, it would seem they are using her for information……yeah」

Whilst muttering such things, he was also considering in his mind if the two people who kidnapped her was her business rivals. Looking at it from a common sense stand point, it could not be helped to think that these two were her enemies.

「Regardless of the case, without capturing the intruders, we can’t find out any information and the questioning cannot begin」

Once again Kaizen looks towards the research facility. He already ordered his subordinates to seal all the exits. Next all he had to do was wait and slowly squeeze them out.

Dogon!!

Whilst still in the middle of thinking out his plans, suddenly a huge roaring sound could be heard from the facility.

It was a sound that could shake the foundations of the building, however it was a different sound from an explosion, and it sounded more like something huge had smashed into each other.

「Situation Report!」

「Yes, I will confirm it right now」

「This sound is……is it the sound of a truck smashing into something? No if they were using something as conspicuous as a car, we would have found out beforehand. In that case, what could it be…..」

「Kaizen-sama!」

「What is it?」

「Th, the walls….」

「The wall?」

「Yes, the walls…..are being crushed down…..one by one」

「The walls are being hit?」

「Yes, the target is hitting the walls…..and creating a hole in order to escape」

「…….Impossible」

Kaizen loses his voice, it was a development he could not anticipate.

「That hole….No, the target, what is their position?」

「Yes, all of the men are being sent towards the hole and trying to encircle them, the target has all escaped through the wall」

「Kuu, we must capture them at once, chase after them!」

「Yes sir」

The subordinates once again gave their orders through the radio.

「What the heck is going on?」

Kaizen groans out in distress. Inside where various unexpected things were happening in the facility he could not sit idly, as Kaizen rushed into the facility towards the direction of the huge sound with his subordinates.

Memo at the 40th Chapter.

【Level】7

【Main Abilities】

Strength: 51

Charm: 65535

Popularity: 0

Skills: Long distance immunity

Fighting power: 5 (Approximated by Shirokiyami)**【Main Property】**

Debt of about 11 million yen.

An annoying Fairy (Virgin?)

Broken Smart Phone

One Room Apartment.

【Brides】

Hayakawa: Kotone, Suzune, Kazane

【Acquaintances】

Shirokiyami (An Evil Godl, Fighting power 139) Miyagi Aoba

Juunishima Sakura

【People who can see Hera】

Azumaya Kohaku AKA Loli Baba

Juunishima Yurikago

Hayakawa: Kotone, Suzune, Kazane

Chapter 39: The Key to a Successful Harem

Chapter 41: I really wanted to hear those words

Chapter 41

Chapter 40: A Means to and End

Chapter 42: Peerless Might Begin!

Behind the facility was a forest. The path that Taiyou opened up by creating a hole in the wall, did not lead to a road, instead Yurikago had to weave and dash between the trees. Holding the memory card that held the data firmly in her hand, as long as she had this, she could stop the plans that Sakura perpetuated.

「By the way, there's been something that got me curious」

Hera was talking to Yurikago, Hera was an existence she could not fathom until moments ago.

「What is it?」

「Yurikago-chan, aren't you supposed to be the next head of your family? Doesn't that mean, that you are in a higher position compared to Sakura-chan?」

「……My rank is higher」

「Is that so? then in that case, can't you just order her to stop, and that will be the end of it ～?」

Hera was without a doubt asking her about the Blood Soul Project. And Yurikago understood that it was a very natural question to ask.

Putting on a disguise, and coming in contact with people from the outside was not a first time for her. And for outsiders, it was difficult for them to understand that a huge power struggle which was occurring within the Juunishima family.

Certainly if you were to compare their rank between Yurikago and Sakura, they were like heaven and earth. Similar in the way that the elder brother of Oda Nobunaga could not succeed his family no matter how much he struggled due to being an illegitimate child, Sakura could not ever reach as high a position as Yurikago.

Therefore, just like what Hera has asked, it was actually quite possible to stop Sakura's actions by force if she ordered her to do so.

However, the order would only be followed by pretext.

Although the plan itself, if it was declared publicly would garner public criticism from a humane viewpoint, at the same time, with how big and powerful the Juunishima clan is……..And the fact that an unprecedented degree of earnings can be achieved from the success of this plan, it would not be so easily stopped.

Women all over the world could stop growing old, the ultimate anti-aging solution.

Just as Sakura has said previously, the amount of expected earnings would be in trillion of monetary units.

It is beyond a man's imagination just how many women who would drop their wallets and spend fortunes to become beautiful, not only that, on the opposite side, there also an abundance of males who would spend money for their women as well.

If Yurikago were to act foolishly and forcibly stop that plan without any good reasons, this would become a subject that she would be attacked with later in the future.

Consequently, she needed a just cause, in this case human rights.

This is why she voluntarily took action herself whilst disguising herself, she did not really want to explain all this to Hera.

In her achievement of this objective, it was by no means a requirement to

explain to Hera. Also, she was different from Sakura, she did not have a hobby of enjoying a game of words nor was she interested in conversation.

Thus, Yurikago hastened her steps as she ran away in the woods…

(Natsuno Taiyou)

Since a while ago and for a long period of time, this name was sticking inside her head and she could not stop thinking about it. The boy who had similar sense of values to herself, having different objectives and a way of doing things, and the boy who put his way of doing things into practice.

This particular concept had not parted from Yurikago's head. When she took a sidelong glance, Hera was flying next to her side nonchalantly. She wondered if Hera was not worried about Taiyou.

「You—」

「Yes desu, What's up〜?」

Responding Hera turns her face towards Yurikago. The moment Hera's face was seen, Yurikago withheld her curiosity of "Aren't you worried about him" and asked a different question.

「—-You understand what he is capable of right?」

「Yes desu〜」

「It seems that guns do not work against him, just how far does that apply?」

「To be accurate he has a skill called "Long distance immunity" desu. It isn't a matter of how effective it is, if it is a long distance attack, nothing will work against him desu」

「I want to clarify the definition of long distance, is it an absolute thing?」

「Yes desu」

「Then how about short distance? For example if he were to be hit by crow bars?」

「That will not do desu, his body will be violently damaged desu」

Yurikago makes a pale face and began to tremble.

「…….Does he have a method to deal with those kind's of attacks?」

「Taiyou-chan desuka? Ummm, get them before they get him desuka?」

「……」

Whilst advancing her path through the woods, Yurikago had a frown on her face.

When everything was put together, she concluded that Taiyou was in an extraordinary pinch right now. Yurikago instinctively thought "is he alright?".

「He should be alright desuyo〜, his mind is still clear, nanodesuyo 」

「I, I'm not asking because I'm worried okay」

「Is that so nanodesu?」

「Isn't it natural」

Yurikago spoke in a tight tone of voice as if she wanted to get past the subject. And once again looking at the carefree Hera flying around her, she asked another question.

「By the way, when you said that he's fine, what exactly did you mean?…… do you mean that he was able to successfully buy us time?」

Yurikago spoke as if she needed an explanation.

「Yes desu, it's because he's Taiyou-chan desukara〜」

「What do you mean?」

「It's because he's my Taiyou-chan, thats why… it's because he was putting on a show and looking cool as he declared to Yurikago-chan that he would buy us time, therefore, he definitely will be fine desuyo〜」

「…..That's it?」

「Yes desu〜」

「Hang on one minute, isn't there something more? Doesn't he have more special skills perhaps? Or special ideas?」

「Special skills?」

Hera inclines her neck and was in thought. The face that appeared naturally after, implied that there was no other special skill.

「……」

She halted her movements instinctively, and looked at Hera with eyes of complete astonishment.

"Believe in others required no reasoning"……Although that kind of thinking may be nice to hear, Yurikago was by no means that kind of person. For her, in order to believe in something, there needed to be a good reason. If there was a clear reason to it, she was the type of person who could believe in anyone, however, believing in a person based purely on faith was something she absolutely could not do.

「What's wrong desuka～? If we don't escape quickly, we will be in trouble desu」

「……」

「Yurikago-chan?」

Yurikago was hesitating. After getting out of the hole in the wall and escaping, it was the first time she turned around. The wall was now far enough that it was completely covered by the trees. Beyond the wall, there was Taiyou, who in order to buy her time, was sacrificing his body. The fact that there has been no

sign of pursuers arriving means that, whatever he was doing, he was succeeding in halting their movements.

However, the success of the plan had no relation with how safe, he was right now. No in fact, it was an inverse relation. Almost like the stories whereby, the General of the Army has the duty of holding off the rear, whilst the lord escapes.

「—-tsu」

She grinded her teeth together, and reflexively curled her hand into a fist.

Even more than before, the memory card in her hand emphasized its importance once again. In the present state, it was the thing that could not be captured by the enemy.

「Yurikago-chan?」

「…….It's nothing. Let's go」

Yurikago shook her head. She turned her back from the direction of the wall and started to walk again.

Holding back her emotions which was in conflict, she turned her eyes away. With a single intent, she advanced and advanced forwards.

Rustling sounds.

Suddenly, there was a sound of something moving that was not the sound of her footsteps. As if a person was hiding within the grassy bushes, there was an unnatural sound of shaking leaves.

Yurikago halts her movements and glared at the grassy place.

「You, did you bring anything?」

「An item desuka? I didn't bring anything desuyo〜?」

「…….Then what about if I threw an item away, could you pursue it and confirm where it fell?」

「If that's the case, I can do it desu〜」

Yurikago nodded expressionlessly, and she thought that if worse comes to shove, she would throw away the memory stick in her hands and hide it amongst the bushes, and she could then retrieve it tomorrow or the day after as long as

she had the location.

And, she continued to stare at the thicket.

「Puu, hah…… The air….is…deli,cious」

What appeared was a young maiden with abnormally white skin and hair wearing a black lacy dress.

Shirokiyami was there.

「You, why are you here?」

Yurikago was caught off guard, and Shirkoyami casually approaches her.

「I found–you. I've come to, pick you–up」

「Pick me up?」

「Yea. I thought that…..thing kind of thing might—happen」

Shirokiyami says this, as her white long hair that reaches the back of her knee flutters, and she turned her body around.

「Let's–go」

「Wait」

Shirokiyami stops moving forward, and only her neck turns to look, with a face that said "???".

「Are you cooperating with me?」

「To be accurate…..I'm cooperating with—him」

「That's also fine, to what extent are you willing to help?」

「I'm being employed by him, so….it's a daily–thing」

「In order for me to go ahead, he is staying behind and in danger. What about instead of helping me escape, you save him instead?」

「If….a bonus is—paid」

「10 million, I will pay it」

「Ok–ay」

Saying this Shirokiyami turns around in the direction in which Yurikago came

from, and ran like the wind.

Though Shirokiyami returned towards the wall, all she could see was a mountain of corpses piled up, and the appearance of Taiyou who was standing on top with a dignified appearance.

Chapter 40: A Means to and End

Chapter 42: Peerless Might Begin!

Chapter 42

Chapter 41: I really wanted to hear those words

Chapter 43: Combat Cheat

High walls at least several meters high surrounded the facility, Taiyou created a huge hole in the wall and allowed Yurikago to escape to the other side of the woods.

At the research facility —- From here on out, in order to create a big disturbance, Taiyou was standing in a daunting pose whilst blocking the path through the hole. It was all in order to buy time for Yurikago. His face revealed a determined expression and a dignified appearance. With such a determined gazed that filled his eyes with light, he met Kohaku's eye's glance by chance.

「You should also get behind me and please hide」

「You don't have to worry about defending someone like me, in fact, wouldn't it be better for you if you used me as a shield or as some kind of hostage?」

「If we are talking about using you as a hostage…. Then all the more reason for you to be safe and sound until that time」

「I understand, that also makes sense」

She nods and just like Taiyou told her… or not…. she moved towards his front,

and just like that she jumped into his embrace. Because of her low height, with his hands on her waist, it looked as if a little child was clinging on to one's parents.

「Kohaku-san?」

「Umu?」

「May I ask? What are you doing? 」

「What, it's not something you need to be concerned about, when the fight starts, I will be sure to part away. Even if I look like this, I'm actually really good at the timing of separating」

「If you at the age of 87 years old, did not have a good discernment, it would be a serious matter! Wait no, what I mean to say is, why are you clinging on to me?」

「I can only answer your question like a mountain climber, will that be alright?」

「I don't need to hear it! Thing's like because there is a waist to climb and what not?!」

「That's a little incorrect, it's because there is a crotch there—」

「Too much information!」

Taiyou raises his voice and interrupts her statement. At this moment, all that chivalrous light and dignified appearance he had was blown away.

「What kind of reason is that?」

「For a woman to seek out a man, what other greater reason would one need?」

「No no no」

「Aren't you happy being treated like this?」

Whilst still clinging on to his waist, Kohaku watched his eyes with an upturned glance. Her eyes that were filled with depth over the years, continued to stare at him. Seeing her adorable glance, Taiyou could not help but to avert his eyes.

「Th–that kind of topic, is not something we should be worried about right now, right?」

「Kukuku, for me, now is as good a time as any. By the way, I'm really happy, to be able to stay like this with you」

Kohaku was smiling as she said this. Her smile was such a gentle and beautiful smile, that it makes one forget her young external appearance.

「You are…」

「Eh?」

「You're body temperature is really high, isn't it? Your body and also your hands. It feels so warm I feel like it could burn my skin. There is a theory that people with warm hands have really cold hearts, but what about you I wonder?」

「Your hands are quite cold though」

Taiyou counter attacks.

「Umu, even though it's early summer, I am in lightly dressed clothes, that's why」

Kohaku doesn't hesitate and immediately gives a response. She pressed her body even closer against him, as if implicitly saying that she wanted to warm her cold body with his. Taiyou heart was beating fast. Feelings that would never be felt if the other party was a genuine little girl started to resurface. He began to remember the hot throbbing feeling he had in his chest and groin area. Although he was on the brink of feeling inclined to take action…….The situation did not give him sufficient time to act any further.

「They've arrived」

Kohaku mutters softly, whilst Taiyou immediately nods his head. The voices

and the sound of footsteps got louder and louder as people approached from within the research facility. Before long, one person after another appeared from the sides and the front of the building, as they began to surround Taiyou from all sides.

Taiyou had his back towards the wall, and large men in black clothing surrounded him in a semicircle. In the middle of them, there was a man with a handsome face, he was wearing glasses and looked like the intellectual type.

The others seem to be looking towards him and consulting with the man in glasses as if taking orders from him. From an outsider's point of view, it was obvious that the man in glasses was their leader. The man took one step forward and began to speak.

「My name is Juniishima Kaizen」

The man who introduces himself as Kaizen had an arrogant attitude as if he declaring that he was the best. Having heard this particular name, seemed like these days, he was hearing this name every single day.

「Juniishima…..」

At the man who introduced himself as such, Taiyou muttered back. Having let Yurikago escape beforehand was the right decision after all. And once again, he resolved himself to buying enough time for Yurikago to escape completely.

「I am—」

「I already know, you are Natsuno Taiyou, right?」

He was about to follow Kaizen's example of introducing himself in the most arrogant tone, however, before he could do so, Kaizen had already cut him off.

「Muu」

「And the person behind you, is Asumaya Kohaku, one of the people who is supposed to be cooperating with the research done here」

「Umu, you may call me Kohaku-tan」

Kohaku was saying this in a teasing manner.

「Ko–」

Being flustered at Kohaku's words Kaizen cleared his throat and looked around the vicinity.

「By the way, there was supposed to be another one, the girl where is she? Don't tell me that she escaped using the hole behind you?」

「What are you talking about?」

「……..I see, I will change my question……Where is Sakura-san right now?」

Hearing Kaizen's question, Taiyou blanked out momentarily.

He already anticipated various questions that he would be asked, and already prepared answers to them in his head, however, getting asked about the whereabouts of Sakura was completely outside of his assumptions. Why Kaizen would ask about Sakura's whereabouts was something Taiyou was not completely sure of at this point in time, for now, he was going to play dumb whilst seeing the situation, in order to buy more time.

「Sakura? Who are you talking about?」

「Please don't pretend to be stupid, I already know that you attacked the Juniishima residence this morning, and that you have kidnapped Sakura. I will ask you one more time, Where is she?」

「The mansion? Sakura? What have you been talking about since a while ago?」

「……Just how far are you going to pretend not to know?」

「Thing's I don't know cannot be helped, it's quite simple」

「Then, I will ask you this. Why did you come into this research facility?」

「Oh, it's about that?」(Kohaku speaking)

Instead of Taiyou replying, Kohaku who was still clinging to his waist even now began to talk.

「When a man and woman, tries to avoid attention in the middle of the night as their bodies are sticking together… Seeing this, are you so stupid that you don't understand the meaning behind it?」

「You're trying to say that, you are having a secret date?」

「Would it be better if I said we were having sex?」

「Se—」

Kaizen's face turned bright red.

「Kukuku, you so naive aren't you. Are you a virgin? No looking at that expression, not to mention kissing, I bet that you haven't even held hands with a girl, right?」

「Ttthat kind of thing is completely irrelevant!」

「Kukuku」

Although she was laughing, she did not pursue the issue.

Kaizen was desperately trying to regain his composure, and instead of Kohaku, he asked Taiyou a question.

「This is the last time I will ask, where did you hide Sakura-san?」

「I can't tell you thing's I don't know, haven't I already said this?」

Taiyou answered.

「I understand, in that case, after capturing you two, we will slowly find it out later. In addition, we will make sure to get the other woman who escaped through that hole」

Saying this, Kaizen turned his gaze towards the hole.

「After capturing her. I wonder which of you three will, break down and confess first?」

Saying this, Kaizen raised his hand.

Was that the signal? All his subordinates immediately reacted and moved forwards together.

「Please stand away from me」

「Umu」

Kohaku quickly leaves Taiyou's embrace and moves behind him. Although there was a little sense of loss, there was no room for him to deeply think about it. Taiyou glared at the men who was approaching. It was exactly like those glares that a sumo wrestler would have before clashing into each other.

With that, he charged into them at full speed alone. The men he ran towards was seemingly experienced in Judo and was attempting to catch Taiyou in those type of grappling movements. Taiyou as if reacting to the other party extended his hands and entangled finger with finger grappling each other.

「Nun!」

Along with his war cry, he put power into his hands. His power which was at level 7 was used without restraint, and soon after the sound of cracking knuckles was heard, it was followed by the scream of the men in black.

In the moment they linked hands, Taiyou grasped his opponent with enough force to crush his fingers and bones using his super human power.

「……I can do this」

He grabbed on the legs of the man who was now crouching down in pain whilst gripping his hands, and lifted him straight into the air. Even though the man was built like a pro wrestler, Taiyou easily carried him off the ground as if he was as light as some Styrofoam.

Just like that, he flung the man towards the clumped up group. His opponents could not react to the flying man, and was caught up in the impact as they all fell down noisily.

Even when the men were being all noisy, Taiyou silently approached them.

This was the first time he felt the euphoric sense of battle. It was the primitive euphoric feeling of a man that was exercising violence.

「D–Do it!」

Kaizen was flustered and quickly ordered his men to get up, with his order, the men all flung themselves towards Taiyou.

A fiendish smile floated across his face as he gleefully turned to meet his enemies head on. (**Novel Illustration: Kaizen v Taiyou**)

Chapter 41: I really wanted to hear those words

Chapter 43: Combat Cheat

Chapter 43

Chapter 42: Peerless Might Begin!

Chapter 44: Counterattack

There was a certain euphoria in wielding such overwhelming might. If you were to compare it to the games he loved, it would be akin to raising his level, finding the best party and then challenging the hardest boss in the last dungeon, not only that, without creating any tactics and just using pure force of strength and skill, they could mow down the final boss, it was akin to that kind of exhilarating sensation.

It has been said that when someone experiences such a strong feeling, they would also realize that there was an empty void in their heart. However in Taiyou's case, there was only a pure pleasant feeling to it.

Carrying a man who is at least 100 Kilo's and then throwing them out towards the group of enemies. The result is the entanglement of humans as they rattled down on to the floor, as if they were human bowling targets.

「Ev-everyone attack together!」

Although Kaizen's instructions were spoken with a flustered tone, an order is an order. With that single phrase, five men immediately rushed forwards together this time. Taiyou ran up to meet them head on. Taking a small side step

Taiyou turned to his side and…

Dosu!

A dull thud resounded, as Taiyou landed a body blow directly in the pit of the man's stomach. The man's body convulsed to form a "く" character as he crawled in pain along the floor, in the next instant, his legs were pulled above the ground as much as one meter in the air. Furthermore it continued to rise in speed. In that instant, a particular technique popped out in Taiyou's mind. If it's me right now I can do it! He gripped the man's foot and places it firmly in his grasp, He then grabbed both the man's ankles and placed them beneath his armpit.

「UOhhhhhhh!」

Taiyou released a war cry which began to echo in the surroundings. It was like a roar of a fierce animal, the four other men who heard this froze their footsteps being overpowered by the pressure. Taiyou started to rotate his body whilst still holding on to the man's feet.

Giant Swing.

At first glance, this kind of move seemed easy to perform, however, a person in this world who could actually perform this move satisfactorily hardly exists. The ideal type of result when using this type of technique is that the body of the other party must be swung fast enough yet still maintain a horizontal degree of elevation.

In reality when the average person tried to perform this move, at best the others party head is close to the ground, or in the case where the person is unskilled, the head of the person being thrown would be grazed across the ground as they rotated

In short many people were short in terms of the amount of strength required, However Taiyou was in an excess in that power! It was the herculean strength he already acquired when reaching level 7. It was the same as making that man into a bat, and he was swinging it in an exemplar fashion using a horizontal swing that would put the youthful baseball team to shame.

Zing! Zing! Pow! Gusha!

The sound of the man's scream and the sound of the wind as he was swung…… in addition to the sound of flesh collapsing mixed with the sound of bones getting crushed. With a huge mass of meat as his weapon, the other four people were blown away.

「Dooooooryaaaa!」

After blowing away all the men in black, he did one more rotation to finish it. Taiyou threw away the lump of meat…..directly at the group of people.

Zuzazazaza. Like a rippling effect of a skidding stone going across the water, the second strike created a sand cloud in the area.

「Wh-what what the hell is this?! Who the hell are you?!」

The cool and intelligent atmosphere Kaizen had moments ago was but a fleeting memory, and it was replaced with a hysterical voice. At this point in time, neither he nor his subordinates had any more nerve to challenge Taiyou. When witnessing the overwhelming power Taiyou showed, this was the result.

After throwing away the second person, Taiyou gazes at his palm, and thinks back to the feeling that remains.

「Ahh……..」

A voice of wonder leaked out instinctively.

It feels good, it feels really good, this feels extremely good.

Wielding this strength was like an aphrodisiac for Taiyou and it was almost akin to a kind of sexual arousal. In a certain meaning, this is the first time that Taiyou clearly felt the results of raising his level. Being able to single-handedly attack the other party in combat, has increased his primal male urge of aggression.

「Fu……」

Whilst floating a thin smile across his face, Taiyou walks towards the men.

Za, Za, Za……

For Taiyou he was merely casually walking towards them, however, each step he took, pushed the men backwards towards a wall as if cornering them to retreat.

「M–monster…..!」

It smelled like someone pissed their pants…In that instant, the smell became a trigger for fear, and that fear infected the others in an explosive fashion. For now, the men managed to remain still, however if he took one more imposing step, without a doubt they would run and scatter away like little spiders in all directions. The thing that stopped them from breaking down, was after all, the words from their leader Kaizen.

「Wh-what are you all doing?! Isn’t it just one person? That’s right…Everyone get your weapons out and attack him at once!」

Kaizen’s words were without a doubt filled with fear…..However his orders were orders.

「U, Uwaaaaaaaah!」

「Grrrahhh!」

As if squeezing out, two men raised their voices.

The two people scatter left and right, as they sprang forth to attack Taiyou from both sides.

They both had some sort of baton with them in their hands as they took a big swing towards Taiyou.

Doka! Baki!

Taiyou avoided their swings, and counterattacked them both with his fist. The first person got hit directly in the head, as he spun three times like a pin wheel, after which his face hit the ground, the other person guarded the punch with a cross guard and both his arms were crushed like a ping pong ball as he flew away.

「Hiiiiiiii」

It was to that extent. Their efforts for battle only amounted to that much. From then on out, what remained was a one-sided show of violence where Taiyou remained the unrivalled victor. They were ruled by fear as they stood up straight. Taiyou rushes in and without giving them any time to breathe, the other party was made to surrender with his overwhelming power.

one person, another person, and another. The men were noisily beaten down.

All of them were knocked out with a single strike. All of the men who were hit was blown off by the power, and even those that attempted to guard his strike got their arms pulverized. On the other hand, Taiyou was completely uninjured. The person who moves first is the victor. Because he knocked them all out in one blow before they had the chance to retaliate, he doesn't receive any damage.

It was like a scene of an evil fairy that trampled down a town and its inhabitants without giving them a chance to retaliate. Even so, no matter what, Taiyou did not stop.

Hit, and knock them down.

Hit, and knock them down.

Hit, and knock them down.

And soon after, defeating all those men, he noticed that the only one left standing was Kaizen.

「Now then, there's only you left」

「Hii!」

Kaizen twitched as fear ruled over his body. His foot was trembling and his teeth was also clattering. He was barely able to keep standing. Whilst still having a thin smile over his face, Taiyou approaches him.

「D-don’t come any closer, don’t come nearby!」

「……」

Even so, Taiyou approaches silently. Kaizen steps backwards shrinking away, he stumbles and lands on his bottom. Even so he crawls away along the ground in an ungraceful manner as he tries to run away. Taiyou chases after him silently. Each step causing pressure to Kaizen.

「U, Uwaaaaa」

Releasing a shriek, Kaizen took out his gun and aimed it at Taiyou. Although the muzzle of the gun was aimed towards Taiyou, it is likely that he never shot a gun before, he was holding it in a haphazard fashion.

「St-stop! If you don’t stop I will shoot!」

「……」

「Don’t move!!!」

Bang!

A gunshot resounds. The bullet was fired at close range and aimed straight towards Taiyou’s chest. As expected with such a close distance, the bullet was shot accurately to the heart. A blow that would prove fatal.

That is, if Taiyou was a normal person. Taiyou was different, he who received a bullet to the heart had no reaction whatsoever. Long Distance Invalidation, with this skill, he completely nullified the lethal weapon known as a bullet.

The bullet that hits falls harmlessly to the floor as it bounces of Taiyou’s chest and into the ground. Seeing this, the level of panic increased even further for Kaizen.

「Uw, Uwahhhhhhh!」

Bang! Bang! Bang bang bang bang bang!

Multiple shots were fired out continuously. Even if all of those hit, as expected

Taiyou was still unharmed.

「Wh-what are you?! What are you?!」

Kaizen became half crazed as he continued to scream. Taiyou mowed down all of his subordinates, and on top of that bullets don’t even work on him. In front of Kaizen, the only thing he could see was a monster in the shape of a human.

Being too overconfident that he had the advantage, he was way too careless.

「D-don’t move!」

A voice was heard from the other direction. When he turned around, there was one of the men, who took Kohaku as a hostage. (**Novel Illustration: Taiyou Combat Cheat**)

Chapter 42: Peerless Might Begin!

Chapter 44: Counterattack

Chapter 44

Chapter 43: Combat Cheat

Chapter 45: According to Cross-chan: Lolita complex is a Sickness

---

Taiyou turned around and loses the smile on his face. What he saw in front of him was a man, with a swollen face, and Kohaku who was being restrained by the man. Out of the subordinates that were brought along by Kaizen, this man was tall and solidly built, he could easily be classified as a “big grunt” type of person. On the other hand, Kohaku had the average constitution of a ten year old girl.

They had such a huge difference in their physique, the man had his arms around Kohaku’s neck, and it seemed like he was in a position to snap off her neck at any moment. To put it quite simply, they were in a pinch—

「Don-don’t move!」

The man’s voice was shaking. Even though he was supposed to be in a dominant position, it could not be helped that he was scared out of his wits, as just moments before, the person he was threatening wiped out dozens of his comrades with unparalleled strength.

Even if he had a hostage with him, it was quite visible that the fear of Taiyou still remained firmly embedded within his eyes. Taiyou slowly turned around his

body to face him.

「I told you not to movee!」

「Uuu……」

The shrill and nervous voice of the man, was followed by Kohaku's anguished voice. The man strengthened the force of his grip, the pressure on her throat increased and Kohaku looked like she was in a lot of pain.

「If you move any further, I don't know what I might do!」

「……..」

「You've done well Oshita. Now then, bring the girl and come over here」

「Yes sir」

The man called Oshita was restraining Kohaku as he moved around Taiyou in a big circle whilst never taking his sight off him. The man slowly headed towards Kaizen in this manner.

「…….To take such a young girl as a hostage, don't you feel embarrassed?」

「That kind of provocation won't work」

Compared with Oshita's manner of speaking, Kaizen had regained a lot of composure to his tone of voice. He was so flustered just moments ago, and it seemed as if it was all just a lie.

「I already know that as part of the Eternally Little, her appearance doesn't match her age. Azumaya Kohaku, she is one of the oldest people taking part in this project, and she is 87 years of age. She is most definitely not the "young" person you claim her to be」

「In that case, I will paraphrase it, don't you respect your elders?」

「I already told you that such cheap provocations won't work against me…..Oshita」

「Yes!」

「So that she has no chance of escaping. Use something to bind her」

「Roger that!」

Kaizen had a gloating smile on his face after hearing Oshita's acknowledgement.

Meanwhile, Taiyou's eyes met Kohaku's. Perhaps it was because she had already lived for 87 years….and the fact that she lived in the most turbulent period in this country's history. Although she had her neck completely restrained by a big and brawny arm, and whilst she did have a look of discomfort on her face, her eyes showed no fear.

On the contrary, her eyes were looking straight at Taiyou as if she was trying to urge him to do something. What she wanted to tell him, was something Taiyou could not figure out. The amount of time he has known Kohaku did not pass a period of three hours, being able to communicate with tacit understanding or by using eye contact was not something he could do with her at this point in time.

Moreover, even if Kohaku wanted him to do something. Taiyou's objective hasn't really changed, and in fact the situation right now was convenient for him. This was his thoughts.

「I will ask you the same question as before, where is Sakura-san?」

「……She isn't here」

Taiyou pretended to yield Kaizen as though he was reluctant.

「I already know that. What I want to know is, where did you put her?」

「I don't know, because that task…Was given to someone else」

「A detached force?」

「Ahh, I barely know her, her name is Shirokiyami, a Goth Loli girl. She is the

one who took Sakura」

「Mu」

Kaizen's face became stiff. Kaizen also knew of the fact that Taiyou attacked the Juunishima mansion with Shirokiyami, so he easily believed in the words. But then again, this was not that far from the truth anyways.

「When will….You get in touch with each other, where will you meet?」

「I also don't know that, the arrangement was that when I escaped from the facility, the other party would come to meet me」

「…..Are you telling me that Shirokiyami is the mastermind behind this? No, Shirokiyami doesn't have her own set of principles, she is merely guided by money. It is certain that there is someone controlling her from behind the scenes…」

Kaizen was grumbling to himself.

「Kaizen-sama, what should we do?」

「……First of all, wake up all the members」

「Yes!」

Oshita was waking up his colleagues whilst still restraining Kohaku.

The men Taiyou put down took a huge amount of damage, and they were unable to get up. Rather than saying that they would get up. Most of the men had their bones shattered and it would not be strange if they had to quit their jobs and go to the hospital to recover for several months

Out of the dozens that were on the floor, there was only about five people that could get up including Oshita. The five of them had a relatively minor injury compared to the others as they stood in front of Kaizen and waited for orders. Meanwhile, Oshita ties Kohaku arms behind her back with ropes he found somewhere and gags her mouth.

「Natsuno Taiyou, I will also have you become one of the hostages」

「Me as well?」

「Yeah, I will have you and Azumaya Kohaku become hostages to exchange

with Sakura-san」

「…..I see」

「Bind him with ropes as well」

「Yes sir!」

The four men respond to orders and moved forwards in Taiyou's direction. Although he was about to be constrained, Taiyou did not panic. This was also not too far from what he wanted to accomplish. Having Yurikago get far enough by gaining her more time to escape was his main objective. That's why although his face looked sour on the outside, on the inside he was snickering at them.

However, in the next moment, the calm atmosphere was blown away.

Gotsuu!

A dull sound resounded, and his field of vision turned white. For a moment his consciousness flew, Taiyou could not understand what was happening. The first thing he understood when he gradually regained his thoughts, was that he was on the ground, and some of the dirt had entered his mouth. And the fact that he was hit in the back of the head took him a few more seconds to realize.

「This punk! How dare he attack us a while ago!」

「Arrogant little shit!」

「Take this! and this!」

The men were viciously beating on him as if they were releasing all that pent up anger that they've built up until now.

「Kuu—」

In order to brush away their strikes, Taiyou got up. Taiyou instinctively made a fist and took on a fighting pose.

「Don't move! Don't you care what happens to her?」

Oshita once again reminded him, as he used his rugged hands to grip Kohaku's windpipe. His massive hands against the small Kohaku. If he put in a little strength to his grip, it seemed like her throat would snap.

「……..」

Taiyou silently opens his fist, and straightens up. It was the kind of pose that showed how a child would be subservient to their father.

「Oraaa!」

In order to make sure he wasn't going to rebel, one of the men threw a fist right at Taiyou. The punch that comes to the side of his face was a clean hit, and Taiyou once again fell towards the ground.

And then, the four men started to kick Taiyou relentlessly one after another. All of them were throwing their anger towards Taiyou.

「Leave it at that. Hurry up and tie him up」

「Yes sir!」

At Kaizen's words, although the men seemed slightly dissatisfied, they had more or less released some of their resentment and so they did as they were ordered and restrained Taiyou. His body was propped up, and just like Kohaku previously, his hands were tied behind his back. In addition to that, they took out metallic handcuffs and restrained him with it as well. And just to add a little more assurance, they gave Taiyou a body blow right into the pit of his stomach.

In that moment, there was a metallic taste of iron leaking out from the depths of his throat. He endured it and swallowed it back down. The men pulled Taiyou along and returned to Kaizen's side.

「Kaizen-sama, what should we do about the woman who escaped?」

「Umu?」

Kaizen nods and looks towards the hole in the wall.

「…..Just leave her be, considering the fact that we have two trump cards in our hands, it will be more than enough. More importantly, you guys need to watch these two closely, so that they do not escape」

「Yes sir!」

「Oshita, come and follow me」

「Roger!」

Saying this, Kaizen brought along Oshita and went somewhere. The only ones

left here was Taiyou and Kohaku who was both gagged and restrained, along with the four men. Taiyou and Kohaku were exchanging glances, and even though she was trying to tell him something, as per usual, he had no idea what she wanted to convey to him.

However, the one thing he did manage to figure out that she was worried about his body condition. Her expression was a little different from a while ago, because her eye brows were frowning and her eyes were wavering.

Taiyou was broadly smiling, as he incessantly blinked his eyes open and shut. “Don’t worry about me”, is what he wanted to tell her. Perhaps the meaning was conveyed, because Kohaku’s face seemed a little bit more relieved.

Knowing that she was so worried about him, Taiyou’s heart felt full of warmth. Having someone else be so worried about him, was something he hardly experienced until now.

「Hey, you guys, I don’t think Kaizen-sama will return anytime soon. Then, don’t you think it should be fine?」

「You rascal, are you going to do it again? You Lolicon!」

Taiyou was locking eyes with Kohaku, when he heard an unbelievable vocabulary being mentioned.

Chapter 43: Combat Cheat

Chapter 45: According to Cross-chan: Lolita complex is a Sickness

Chapter 45

Chapter 44: Counterattack

Chapter 46: Uninvited Visitor

「Takayama, are you being serious right now?」

One of the men questioned Takayama, he clearly had eyes filled with contempt.

「Going after loli's is a crime you know?」

「Besides, isn't it disgusting to even think of such a thing?」

「Isn't it fine? I'm not causing any trouble for you guys, why do you guys care so much about my preferences?」

「The fact that a colleague of mine, is a loli con that in itself is causing trouble for me」

「Just endure it for gods sake」

Several of the men were admonishing the loli con. However, the loli con continued to stare at Kohaku with bloodshot eyes.

「I mean come on, look at what she's wearing. I can't hold myself back. Guy's tell me the truth, if a woman of your type were to wear this kind of see-through clothing, whilst she's loitering around, you guy's wouldn't be able to hold

yourselves back, am I right?」

「That is…..」

「That's true I suppose」

The three other people looked at each other and came to the same conclusion. What the loli con guy said had some truth in it. It was certain that Kohaku's current getup was outrageously seductive and bewitching. Her black see-through clothes made her completely visible and it was not something suitable unless you were about to go to sleep.

「I understand」

After a short period of time, one of the men nodded.

「O, oi, is it really okay to let him?」

「It can't be helped right? If we don't let this fellow do his thing it looks like he's about to explode any minute now」

「Ahh…..It seem's that way」

「Oi, we don't know when Kaizen-sama will return. If you are going to do it, you better get it done with in less than 3 minutes」

「I got it」

The loli con man was overjoyed as he nodded ecstatically and made his way towards Kohaku. A lewd smile floated across his face, he began to lick his lips, as his hands wandered around in a indecent manner.

「——」

Kohaku twisted and writhed around, as her eyebrows creased severely.

That was when I met her gaze. Her pupils seemed to appeal for something as it wavers and it feels like she's about to burst into tears at any moment. I began to imagine, her being taken away by the Loli con man, and something…….happens to her. No! I don't want to see that happen, I can't see that kind of scene……I don't even want to imagine it.

「——！」

As he thought such things, something inside Taiyou snapped.

He who was being docile until moments ago put power into both his arms, as he opened both his left and right hands. When he did, a Pachin! sound could be heard and soon consecutive buchi! buchi! sounds started to echo. It was the sound of his metal handcuffs cracking under the pressure and the ropes around his body ripping free.

「Impossible—」

Taiyou did not give the loli con man an opportunity to say any more words than that. Taiyou postpones taking off his gag, as he pulled his right hand back and let it shoot like an arrow towards the man.

Zudoooooon!

Although his fist connected with the belly of the man, what resounded was an explosive sound. The man he hit flew away about 30 meters.

The man who got hit by Taiyou's fist reacted just like he got hit by a speeding truck. His body which tumbled unto the ground started to twitch and convulse and after a few moments there was absolutely no sign of movements any longer.

「Wait」

「Here is—-」

「Guwaaah!」

Taiyou easily pulls and tears up his mouth gag after which he knocked down the three men in quick succession. Then he slowly turned around and went towards Kohaku as he gently tore up the ropes which bound her body.

「Kohaku-san……」

「Are you, alright nojya?」

「Eh?」

「You got hit by them so much, does your body hurt?」

「Eh? ahh, you don't have to worry about me. No more importantly, Kohaku-san what about you?」

「You don't have to worry about me, as you can see I'm completely fine. I am not such a weak minded person to be damaged just from the attempt to harm me, neither will I lose any sleep over it」

「Yeah……」

「Leaving that aside, how about you….? Muu, they were so excessive, your face is considerably swollen」

「I'm alright」

「Wait a little bit」

Kohaku said this as she pulled on her skirt and ripped a part of it. Even before doing this, she already looked really erotic, after ripping the hem of her skirt, she looked even more amorous. Taiyou instinctively becomes embarrassed as he could no longer look straight at her.

「Come and face towards me nojya」

Kohaku holds onto his face and made it turn towards her by force. And with the fabric she tore off, she began to gently wipe his face.

「You've lost quite a bit of blood, haven't you?」

「Truly, I'm alright, so…」

Taiyou utters as he grasped her hand. Looking at her any longer and gazing at each other's face was making him feel embarrassed. That's why he grabbed her arm, but it had the opposite effect.

Before, they were just gazing into each other's eyes, now on top of that they were holding each other's hands. It was as if he was about to go in for the kiss, that kind of posture.

「……」

「……」

The two were at a loss for words. They were just watching each other meeting eye to eye. Kohaku gently shuts her eyes. Naturally, Taiyou brought his face closer. Like a magnet being attracted to each other, their lips approached each other. And just like it was the most natural thing in the world, as their lips were about to touch, in that moment—

「Taiyou-chan～」

「—tsu」

A voice was heard from a long distance away, it seemed infinitely cheerful. When he turned around, he could see Hera flying from the other side of the hole.

「Hera, and even…..You guy's as well」

Taiyou was surprised, behind Hera was Juniishima Yurikago and if he wasn't mistaken Shirokiyami was also standing there. The girls looked at Taiyou with a face full of surprise.

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan, what were you doing just then～?」

「Eh? No I wasn't doing anything」

Taiyou was being evasive. In more ways than one….he thought that he needed to evade the question.

「More importantly, why are you guys here…..? Why did you come here?」

As he said this, he looked towards Shirokiyami's direction. Besides the fact that Yurikago had returned, he was even more surprised that Shirokiyami was here.

「I thought that….Something like this, might happen」

「You aren't going to tell me that, your surname is actually Sanada, right?!」 (Reference to Sanada Yukimura some even called him the "Number one warrior in Japan")

「It's a shame, Mn, it is….n,ot」

Shirokiyami's eyes which were boundlessly deep stared at Yurikago.

「I was…Em. Ployed—」

「Let's move on!」

Yurikago suddenly shouted in a loud voice, cutting off whatever Shirokiyami was about to say. Perhaps it was because she ran back here? Her face was faintly red as it flushes.

「Let's get out of here」

「Ah, Ahh, then I will remain here」

「That's enough from you! Shirokiyami will act as the rear guard」

「Additional fee's, will..apply」

「I'll pay you 100,000, that will suffice right?」(TL: doesn't say if it's in yen or USD, guessing it's in Yen though so that's around 1,000 USD)

「….It's enough, it's more than, enough, nn」

Shirokiyami seemed like she wanted to say something else. Taiyou wondered whether this 100,000 figure represented something else for the girls. He recalls the conversation of her wage being at 40,000 yen per hour and thought that there may be some relation to it as he tilted his head in confusion.

Because he didn't know the main point, his imaginations were completely off the mark. Though she reacts in this manner, Shirokiyami turns around silently as she stared at the facility, just like Taiyou was doing previously.

「Alright, in the meantime, we should escape」

「Is it really okay?」

「That girl right now….she is at least 100 times more useful than the current you. Alright, so come on let's go already」

「Taiyou-chan, we need to go〜」

「It's the legendary Shirokiyami, it will be fine to leave it to her jyaro」

The three girls talked as they tried to persuade Taiyou.

Taioyu thought for a moment before deciding that it was the best course of action.

「In that case, I will rely on you」

「It's for….my salary」

「Guys!」

At Yurikago's urging, Taiyou went through the hole he made himself. Yurikago took the lead as she guided them through the woods that had no visible pathways. Taiyou quietly watches Yurikago's back.

「Thank you」he said.

「Wha, what for–」

「You came back to rescue me right? Thank you, you saved me」

「It-it's not really for your sake… Kohaku-san is an important cooperator, so I only returned to help her, g-got it?」

「Kukuku, I am indebted to you nojya」

「She's so shy～」

Both Hera and Kohaku was laughing at Yurikago.

「Even so, I am really thankful」

「……..Hmph」

Yurikago snuffles like a spoiled child as she turned the other way. Taiyou followed Yurikago and together with the girls, they safely got out of the woods. (**Light Novel Illustration: Reuniting with the Girls**)

Chapter 44: Counterattack

Chapter 46: Uninvited Visitor

Chapter 46

Chapter 45: According to Cross-chan: Lolita complex is a Sickness

Chapter 47: The Seven Brides in Taiyou's Castle

「Let’s split up here」

After getting out of the woods and going far enough that you couldn’t even see the research facility any longer, Yurikago stopped her footsteps turned to face Taiyou and said that. When Yurikago halted so suddenly Taiyou was still in mid run. So they had a slight distance between them.

「You want to separate, here?」

「Yeah. Coming this far it’s already quite safe, rather than being with you」

「…….Ahh, I suppose so」

Yurikago was speaking in a roundabout way. Taiyou thinks for a little while and comes to the conclusion that her words were reasonable. In the current state, the wanted people who were being chased after were probably Taiyou and Kohaku.

Although it was known that there was another accomplice, Yurikago had always hidden her identity since the beginning, and the Juniishima clan never discovered who third party was. On the other hand since Taiyou attacked the

Juniishima residence, he has always been marked as one of the direct perpetrators.

If anyone was going to be chased from here on out, it would be Taiyou. A means to an end, the ideology that Taiyou liked to follow, if he were to apply that train of thought here, than the correct course of action would be to keep away from Yurikago in this situation. Yurikago implied this vaguely, but Taiyou understood her intentions and agreed to her idea.

「Didn't your figure get captured by one of the camera's in the facility, are you sure it will be alright jya?」

「They didn't capture my face, so as long as I am not connected to you guys any longer and I return to the Juniishima clan as Yurikago Juniishima, they won't be able to link me to the scene…That is, as long as none of you say a word about this」

「I see, so I guess there is no problems whatsoever」

Taiyou nods.

Although Taiyou was nodding his head, on the other hand, he was also feeling a reluctance to part. But he pushed such thoughts down to the inner depths of his heart.

「Then, I guess our journey ends here」

「Yeah, Thanks to you I was able to obtain the data, and we were able do it without revealing my existence as Yurikago. With this much I should be able to drive the subject in the direction that I want it to proceed. I really appreciate it」

「It's fine, I was also moving in accordance to my own objectives so. I will entrust you with the matter of Kotone and the girls」

「I will make sure that the Juniishima clan will not be able to touch them again. I…..no」

Her words were cut short, she closed her eyes and took a deep breath before speaking to Taiyou again.

「I swear it upon my name, Yurikago」

「Thank you」

After she said her part, Yurikago turned around and started to walk as her thin twin tail hair swung. She resolutely walked away with great posture and a single minded focus. Until her appearance could no longer be seen, she never turned around. When Taiyou watched her walk away, he breathed out a sigh.

「What's wrong nojya?」

「Ahh nah. As I expected she's really well-bred」

This was by no means a lie.

「Umu, the way she carries herself, and those graceful movements are not something one can acquire in a short amount of time」

Kohaku agreed with Taiyou's impression of her. The lolibaba who has lived a full life also seems to notice it.

「I think that it corresponds with how she was so restricted when growing up in life」

「Restricted?」

「It has the meaning of a "bird in a cage". Well…these kinds of things happen quite often in this world」

「A bird in a cage….」

「I don't mind if you sympathize with her, but you should also know that there are some birds who will return to the cage by themselves, after the entrance has already been flung open. Not everyone in this world, wishes to slip out of their cages nojya. There are birds who cannot survive without the cage, and there are also birds who find it more comfortable to live in such a place」

「…..Ah」

「Well, we will meet her again soon enough. Life is unexpectedly long, and at the moment you don't expect it the most, you will probably meet her again nojya」

「When you are the one saying that life is long, it makes it more persuasive」

「I've lived until there isn't many years left in me, so it's natural jyaro」

「There not much left desuka～?」

Hera asked a thoughtless question. It was almost like she herself was an elderly person, talking to someone in the same situation as her that kind of care-free question.

「Umu, it's as short as a principals morning assembly」

「Isn't that a considerably long time?!」

「Well the amount of time I've lost is plenty enough」

Kohaku was smiling from ear to ear. The two people began toward the opposite direction from where Yurikago was going.

Taiyou and Kohaku was walking in a straight line together, and Hera who was flying around them was bustling about. In this kind of line up, they walked home whilst making idle talk.

Not disregarding the fact that they could be attacked at any moment, Taiyou was alert to his surroundings even as he had a light hearted conversation with the girls. If an enemy were to show up, he was ready to counter attack at once, and in the worst case scenario he would do his everything to at least protect Kohaku from harm.

In the end though, all that vigilance was for naught. It's not really clear whether that was because Shirokiyami held them back successfully or because of some other unforeseen matter. Although he didn't know the exact details, they all arrived at Taiyou's apartment flat without an enemy ever showing up.

「Taiyou-san!」

「Woops!」

As soon as he opened the door to his apartment, the three triplet sisters jumped on him.

The jump by the three girls was almost like a tackle. Although Taiyou was caught off guard, he managed to hold his ground and bring the three girls all in his arms.

「Hou」

Seeing this scene, for some reason or other Kohaku leaked out a voice of admiration.

「I'm sorry, I've made you guys wait, are you guys alright?」

「Yes, we are all fine」

「More importantly is Taiyou-san alrig……Hyaa!」

「Wha, what happened to your face?」

「Eh?」

The three sister's were shocked by the unexpected change. Taiyou was thinking "Let me see…" to himself as he touched his own face.

When he did, he felt the pain again. His face was completely swollen here and there, and his mouth also had a few cuts. Having touched his face, he realized that it was obviously not in a healthy condition, it was quite hot and painful.

This was all the wounds that he got when those men beat him up. Although they were throbbing with pain right now, he thought that it was all worth it for all the things he had been able to accomplish. However, to the three sisters, it didn't seem like the case.

「Please wait a moment! I will go get the first-aid kit right now!」

「Kaze-chan, there is an egg in the refrigerator right? Can you grab that for us?」

「Okay! I'll get the one with the thickest skin, Suzu-chan, you should let Taiyou-san in quickly」

The three of them were speaking unanimously as they began to move in hurried steps.

Being led by the hand, Suzune brought him inside the room, in the corner of the room, he could see Sakura's appearance who was being gagged and restrained. Incidentally, Taiyou had almost forgotten about this fact and before he could think more about what to do, Suzune had already forcefully pushed him towards the bed and made him sit down.

Soon after Kotone arrived with the first aid kit and Kazane arrived with the egg that was already broken somehow.

「This will hurt a little okay? Please bear with it」

Kotone grabs the antiseptic solution from the first aid kit and it was soaked with the absorbent cotton.

「You bought something like a first aid kit for me?」

「Eh? no it was already inside the room」

「Is that so? I don't remember purchasing such a……tsu!」

「S-sorry. Did it hurt?」

「It's alright you don't have to mind it, after all, it stings a little when the solution seeps in」

「I'm sorry, I'll make sure to do it as careful as I can」

「Suzu-chan, can you bring me the membrane skin of the egg please」

「Yeah!」

Both Kazane and Suzune were using the skin of the egg and pasting it over Taiyou's face like a bandaid.

「Wait, what is this? What are you guys doing?」

「This? If you use the membrane of the egg as a bandage and paste it on top of the wounds, it will heal the wound at an extremely fast speed」

「Is that really true?」

「Yes!」

「Hou, for someone so young to know such a thing, quite impressive jya」

Kohaku who was standing a little away from them seemed to have felt a little

admiration for their knowledge.

「Did you also know about this Kohaku-san?」(Taiyou speaking)

「Umu, I've read some of the books on medical treatment that has been published before via human experimentation」

「As if that would be allowed to be published?! 」

「It's a joke. Anyways, I know that originally using the egg was a sort of home remedy, however, it has also been scientifically proven to be effective for practical treatment as well」

「Is that so?」

Taiyou was somewhat relieved that the human experimentation book was a joke and he let the girls treat him. Kotone, Suzune and Kazane. The three sisters were treating his wounds with such a serious face. It was like they were more worried about his injuries than their own, and they treated him with so much care and urgency.

Seeing this scene, Taiyou was moved. They were truly worried about him and as they cared for him, He felt his emotions start to overflow. A feeling of wanting to just embrace them closely started to bud.

(It should be….fine, right? I think it should be okay?)

It was like he was giving himself permission in his own mind, and just when he was about to put it into practice. Taiyou felt a few glances from a distance away. When he paid attention, near the entrance of the room, both Kohaku and Hera was silently grinning as they looked towards him.

「Ah, he's noticed us desu～」

「It seems that way doesn't it, dear! I thought for sure that something was about to happen right now, and my heart was throbbing in excitement after such a long time jyazo」

「What was about to happen desuka～?」

「Something that living creatures would do naturally jya. It's the same rank of important as sleeping and eating」

「Oh? that must be an important thing then～. But it doesn't seem like Taiyou-chan is about to do anything desuyo～」

「You never know, he might do something henceforth. Should we prepare a drink and some popcorn just in case?」

「What will you do after preparing the popcorn desuka～?!」

Hera and Kohaku was exchanging a comic like dialogue with each other. Hera doesn't seem to think about anything as she just joins in the conversation, whilst Kohaku on the other hand acted as if she knew exactly what Taiyou wanted to do.

「Yes, the treatment is done!」

「Yeah! Because all the skins of the egg were placed on the wounds, I'm sure that it will improve come tomorrow morning」

「Is your body alright? Are there any wounds on it?」

「Thanks a lot guys, I'm find now」

As he said this, the girls floated an expression of relief all together. When he sees their faces being like this, his heart starts to throb again. However this time, he managed to hold himself back.

「Umm, that is can we ask a question?」

Although they did have relieved expressions, this time they had a questioning look on their faces. When Taiyou nodded in confirmation, the girls all looked towards Kohaku and uniting their minds together they asked all at once.

「「「Who is this girl?」」」

Chapter 45: According to Cross-chan: Lolita complex is a Sickness

Chapter 47: The Seven Brides in Taiyou's Castle

Chapter 47

Chapter 46: Uninvited Visitor

Chapter 48: Everything in her possession

In a corner of the residential area during the day time.

The vending machines were lined up together. The things place inside of them were all best selling items by the famous manufacturers, and it was a line-up that would sell without much trouble even if no advertisement is done.

Although the line-up was quite standard, the price it had was absolutely not the normal prices. The price that was attached to the buttons were all at 100 yen. (TL: 100 yen is approx 1 USD). From the carbonated drinks which was at least 500ml to the corn soup and even the sweet red-bean soups, all of the commodities had a price range as little as 100 yen per piece.

Not only was the prices unusually low but the vending machines were place in quite the popular location. In this place, a person named Natsuno Taiyou and the Fairy Hera was here.

Taiyou placed a 100 yen coin in the vending machine. Although all the buttons lit up, Taiyou doesn’t press the buttons, instead he pulls the lever to refund his coin. And then the 100 yen coin which was returned to him was once again inserted into the vending machine! The moment the buttons light up, he pulls

the lever to refund his money.

The coins were put in, and then the change is pulled out.

The coin was put back in and then the change is pulled out again.

This seemingly useless repetitive set of movements were consistently repeatedly as he performed the actions in silence.

「You over there, what are you doing?」

「Ack」

Taioyu is called by someone from behind and he very slowly turned around. The person who stood behind him was the familiar appearance of a uniform wearing man, or more commonly known as a police officer.

The young policeman seemed to be filled with a sense of justice and a sense of duty, he was looking at Taiyou like he was a suspicious person.

「You….I feel like I've seen you before. Have we met before at a different place?」

「Nono, I have never been graced with your esteemed presence in my life, yes yes」

「Taiyou-chan your Japanese is becoming really funny desuyo～」

Hera who was floating next to him pointed this fact out. Naturally the policeman couldn't see her appearance, so he continued to question Taiyou.

「Well whatever. More importantly what are you doing? Are you perhaps trying to look for spare change from the machines?」

「Please I'm not doing that. Umm…..All I am doing is putting my own money in and, then taking it out, and then putting it back in again….」

「……」

The young policeman looked at Taiyou with incredibly suspicious eyes, as he slowly moved his hand towards his wireless radio and started to speak in it.

「Reporting in, I am at the foot of the Seikasono Mountain, I've detected a suspicious person」

「I’m telling you, you’ve got it all wrong」

Taiyou objects in frustration and he unintentionally hit the vending machine. If it was a little while ago, it would have been to the extent that the vending machine experienced a little shake, but the him right now was a level 7 power fighter.

In just one blow, the vending machine broke down and started to spout out smoke.

「A-are you attempting to resist?」

「Ah…..no this is…」

Taiyou was trying to give an explanation, but the policemen were already beginning to gather around him. The speed in which they gathered together was so fast, like when gangsters called their members. If he was caught right here, without a doubt he was going to be lectured harshly.

No, this time around, he actually damaged the vending machine and broke it, so he might not get away with just a warning. Thinking about the possibility of something like that happening, he grabbed the bag on his feet and immediately ran away as fast as he could.

Behind him, he could hear the angry shouts of the policemen and their footsteps. In order to shake them off, he ran at full speed across the residential area in broad daylight.

Although he did hear the policemen shouting and several horns were ringing, the sound gradually got smaller and before long the sounds all completely disappeared. Somehow he managed to safely escape from the policemen chasing him.

Taiyou arrived to a certain building that wasn’t his apartment… It was a building enclosed in all its sides by a wall at the height level of a person’s waist, and the wooden building which was approximately two stories tall and it had a garden which was unusual for this day and age.

It was the kind of place that he imagined a 20 year old widow woman to be, she would be an wearing an apron and sweeping the leaves with a broom.But what stood there wasn’t a young widow but instead it was a lolibaba.

「Ohh, You've finally come back」

Whilst standing at the entrance of the building, Azumaya Kohaku was smiling radiantly as she welcomed Taiyou back. Although her limbs were under developed and was that of a young girls, her intellect and her manner of walking was that of an adult.

「You took such a long time for shopping, did you perhaps lose your way back?」

Kohaku was asking him a question, and Hera who was flying next to him came out and answered instead.

「I'm so sorry nanodesu～, it was all my fault nanodesu～」

「Hou, did you have some sort of a secret date or something?」

「That's not it desuyo, I was training together with Taiyou-chan in order to raise his level desu. But in the middle of it we were interrupted by the police officers so we couldn't increase it」

「I see, no matter what age we are in, the officials of the country are always dogs who do unnecessary things, so it can't be helped」

Kohaku nods whilst giggling to herself.

「Well, I'm not too worried, I'm sure I will get the chance to level sooner or later. I already know how to do it so I can go back and do it whenever I want to. More importantly, take this」

Whilst he says so, he handed the plastic bag in his hands to Kohaku. Although Taiyou was being asked by the three sisters and Kohaku to do a bit of shopping, Hera taught him the way to level up to level 8 along the way, and they ended up trying to gain experience.

It was piling up his experience by performing the tedious repetitive work. Most normal people would be discouraged in doing such a repetitive act that yields nothing but frustration, however for Taiyou who was able to level up in real life by performing these acts, it was not at all a bother for him. Therefore, he was thinking of raising his level directly to level 8 but he was obstructed by the policemen who happened to pass by chance and he had to retreat reluctantly.

Kohaku was glancing into the plastic bag which he gave to her. After taking the goods, she asked him a question.

「Come to think of it, you've never explained how your levelling thing works, right?」

「I guess I haven't eh」

「There is a relation with the existence of this girl here right?」

「That's correct nanodesu～」

「In that case, I certainly would like to know more about it」

Kohaku was looking straight at Taiyou as she asked for permission.

「Is it alright?」

「Let's go inside first」

Taiyou turned towards the building.

「I should also explain to Kotone and the others」

Kohaku nodded her head in understanding.

The three people head towards the building together as the main entrance door was open and they entered inside. As soon as the door was opened they entered a room like a sort of lobby and there was also a kind of terrace. Furthermore, there were eight rooms connected to the lobby. He was not yet accustomed to being in this place, and Taiyou began to reminisce about yesterday's events.

Yesterday: Late into the night. Kohaku took him to this place. After Taiyou had

fully explained who Kohaku was to the three sisters, and then explaining the circumstances in which they met and becoming acquainted with each other, Kohaku proposed to move locations.

At any rate, there were five people in his small one room apartment and there was no way they could all fit in there. After hearing about this, Kohaku told him that she knew of a “wide and spacious place”. The place she took him to was an old yet spacious building. And so that is how they got here…

「Ah, Taiyou-san, welcome home」

Taiyou who had entered the building was greeted by the smallest of the three sisters. Kazane had a dustcloth in her hand and she seemed to have just finished cleaning the terrace area.

「How surprising」

Taiyou says this, and as he looked around the vicinity, his face had an astounded expression.

「It’s so much cleaner than before I went out. What happened?」

「I cleaned around a little bit」

「A little?」

Taiyou still had his dumbfounded expression as he turned around the terrace and had a good look. Since the time he arrived her last night, and just before he went out a little while ago…

The building was covered in dust and cobwebs, however now the area was completely clean from any sort of dust and it was extremely spotless. Remembering seeing this somewhere on the TV Taiyou traced his fingers along the window frame, curtain rails and the ventilating opening of the air conditioner. Even a teasing sister-in-law who would always complain about the situation of a house could not voice a single word against how clean the place was.

「Isn’t it just spectacular workmanship? I have just been looking at her from beginning to end and it feels like I am seeing some sort of magic happen or a trick of some sort nojya. It would seem that these three sisters are really good at

housework jya」

「Nono, this is no longer at the level of mere housework, this is more like they are renovation experts」

「I completely agree jya, this is surely the workmanship of a master level artistan」

Taiyou was making a retort at her modesty and Kohaku was agreeing with him with a serious look. That was just how amazing the girl's cleaning skills were. Being overly praised by the two people in front of her, she was feeling really bashful. Kazane and Kohaku was almost the same height. Kazane asked Kohaku a question.

「Umm, Kohaku-san. Is it really ok for us to use this place?」

Kazane seemed to be apologetic. When they arrived here last night Kohaku told them "You can stay for as long as you'd like" to the three girls. They were indirectly connected to the Blood Soul plan and they were also women who had relations with Taiyou. And that's the reason Kohaku proposed this idea to Taiyou, but Kazane seemed to be a little uncomfortable in intruding on Kohaku's place. To such a Kazane, Kohaku answered her with a clear face.

「When a house isn't inhabited by people, it deteriorates at a surprisingly fast pace」

「This place…Hasn't been used in a long time right?」

「Yeah. If people were to live in it, it would actually make it rejuvenated just like it did today nojya」

「But…..」

「There is no need for you to feel uncomfortable, alright?」

Kohaku cuts her words there and Hera who was looking at her surroundings were suddenly gripped hard.

「We are after all comrades who are able to see this girl jya……Would such a reason be insufficient?」

Kohaku was smiling broadly as she said this and speaking as if she was content at the idea of being comrades. Although for a moment Kazane had a surprised

expression as her eyes opened wide, she immediately changed her expression into that of comprehension

Being able to see Hera—Meaning that they were people who have kissed Taiyou.

「Ah….」

「Are you unhappy?」

「No, Not at all! I'm perfectly content!」

「In that case, please take care of me from now on」

Kohaku was smiling. Perhaps they heard the conversation down stairs, in the next moment the door opens from the second floor and Kotone and Suzune's makes their appearance. The two people descend the stairs that had a gentle curve to it as they joined with the group of people gathered below. Kotone stood in front of Kohaku as she began to speak.

「Kohaku-san, I think I saw it before but I believe there was a signboard around the table here somewhere. Does this place have a name or something?」

「Yes it did, I don't remember all the details but, if I'm not mistaken it was called rokumei-kan (mansion) or was it the moment castle?」(TL Rokumeikan seems to be a building built in 1883 July 7 a very iconic building, I'm not sure what the other one represents though >.<)

「Ohh, it's a one-time mansion desune～」

「I don't think it's either of them! Although it might resemble the latter it would be bad if that's the case!」

Hera was just responding to the sensitive iconic building names with an overjoyed reaction, whilst Taiyou was responding by quickly retorting the statements.

「Seriously though, what is it?」

「Don't be like that, I don't really remember exactly what it was called no jya」

「Eh?」

「I didn't use this place that much, and besides I let someone else manage it

jya. As you have seen it's a really old place and quite a trivial one at that」

「I see」

「If you guys insist on it having a name then, I think it will be good if we can give a new name 」

「Is that alright? 」

「Umu, if you'd like then this time around we can really name it the moment castle 」

「You are still on to that aren't cha! But seriously if you name it that, I will get angry okay?」

「Is that so? I thought that it was a masterpiece name deserving of respect, and I can proudly leave it to the future generation with such a name」

「Anyways, let's get a different one」

As Taiyou said this, everyone was tilting their heads as they thought of a name. Before long, Hera opens her mouth.

「I think it will be really good to call it Taiyou's Castle～!」

Hera's whole face was smiling as she gave this suggestion, and everyone else was just blankly staring at her in puzzlement. (**Light Novel Illustration: Meeting Kohaku at the Mansion Entrance**)

Chapter 46: Uninvited Visitor

Chapter 48: Everything in her possession

Chapter 48

Chapter 47: The Seven Brides in Taiyou's Castle

Chapter 49: A Harem that doesn't allow me to Voice Out my Opinions

---

「Taiyou’s Castle?」

Taiyou was the first to react and question Hera’s idea. His eye brows were puckered up and he had a dubious expression on his face. This reaction wasn’t just from Taiyou, even Kohaku and the three sisters had similar confused expressions on their faces. Seeing their reaction, Hera proudly puffs out her chest as she began to explain.

「Yes desu～, Taiyou-chan is the king of this castle so, it should be Taiyou’s castle desu. Taiyou’s fortress and or Taiyou’s tower are also really good names desuyo～」

「Why is it that you always like to joke around so much」

Taiyou reprimanded her resolutely and gave her a slap on the back. Although she flew away quite far whilst spinning around the air, she returned almost immediately whilst flying buoyantly towards the group as if nothing had happened.

Seeing Hera act like this, Taiyou was starting to experience a headache. Taiyou was thinking to himself…..”Lately the amount of women around me that like to joke around with this kind of thing was becoming way too commonplace”.

Although it was overly apparently that Hera and Kohaku were both quite straight forward in their conversations, even Sakura who liked to play around with her words quite often used borderline inappropriate jokes. Not to mention Shirokiyami, although she didn’t really speak much words, some of the things she says can be unfathomably destructive.

They all had their own frightening implications. If things were left as they were now, Taiyou was afraid that sooner or later, people around him would start saying that, he was some sort of dark evil-doer. He secretly thought to himself that he must remain even more vigilant from now on.

「Umu. I also agree with the suggestion jya」

Taiyou was still thinking about such things, when the eldest of the girls Kohaku had already declared her agreement with Hera’s suggestion.

“You’ve got to be kidding me, right?” Taiyou was looking at her in this kind of manner.

「Isn’t there a saying of, “A man needs to aim to become the head of the household”? Back in the day, it had the meaning of becoming the feudal lord of a castle and whatnot, but these days, it has a more comely meaning of……Owning your own cozy home. If we base it on the more recent meaning, I think that this name will really suit the building jyaro」

「Nono, this is the place that you own」

Kohaku was staring at him as if asking “What are you talking about?”.

Whilst Kohaku was speaking as if this was already Taiyou’s mansion, in actuality the owner of this building was Kohaku and it didn’t have any relation to Taiyou. If he was forced to clarify his position it was to the extent that he had only stayed in this building for one night, and in terms of owning rights to the house he definitely did not own such a right. And yet, Kohaku was looking at him as if what he said didn’t make any sense.

「Umu? If you are worried about the ownership rights of the land, I don’t mind

it if I present it all to you, if you'd like?」

「Aren't you using the wrong vocab here? What do you mean "present" it?」

「No, I didn't use the wrong words nojya」

Kohaku happily said so.

「Even if I look like this, I'm quite the old fashioned woman」

「Rather than saying you are old fashioned, isn't your age–」

Just now he realized what he was about to say to Kohaku and he stopped his own sentence mid-way. He knew it was something he shouldn't say—-Even in normal human society it was something that you shouldn't touch, or so people would say that this was a taboo topic to talk about with girls. Naturally, the criticism he was about to receive would also be boisterous.

「Taiyou-san!」

「You can't talk about a girls age like that!」

「It's the most basic of manners!」

The three sisters who had only showed goodwill towards Taiyou up until now suddenly spoke up for Kohaku.

「Ah, Ahh. I'm sorry Kohaku-san, I was just—」

Taiyou faced towards Kohaku and bowed his head in apology. Although it was true that he was being scolded by the three sisters, when he thought about it properly even more so than the average person, talking to Kohaku about her age is probably an even bigger taboo.

They were existences who stopped aging after the age of 10 branded as the eternally little. They were destined not to have a companion for their whole life and were also known as the leftover old maids. To someone like her Taiyou felt that it was very insensitive to talk about their age.

Therefore, Taiyou was bowing down his head, however the person in question didn't seem to be bothered by it in the slightest.

「Oh, don't mind it. I already know that it's a fact that I am already an old lady jyakara」

Hearing her say such a thing, everyone in the room became silent. When someone self-depreciates themselves a little too far it can create this kind of atmosphere, it was that kind of awkward silence they were in. Noticing the awkward atmosphere….Kohaku spoke with an even more mischievous smile on her face.

「Considering the average lifespan of the eternally little I still have approximately 40 years left to live, that's about 1/3 of my life remaining jyana」

「Isn't that actually a really long time?!」

Taiyou spurted the words out without thinking. This was a surprising discovery for Taiyou.

「Umm….If there is 40 years left to live this means….」

「Then is means that you will be able to live to around 120 years old?!」

「Or more like, is that really the average life span of the eternally little?」

Just like Taiyou the three sisters were bewildered and each of them was asking Kohaku questions, this was a naturally thing.

I mean if she said that the oldest known eternally little has lived up to the age of 120 then the reactions would at most be "Wow that's so amazing" but, she actually said that the average lifespan is at least 120, meaning that there is a quite a good chance she may live beyond 120 years, this was something that you couldn't help but be surprised about. Kohaku seemed to be pleased at their reactions and she started to explain in more detail.

「Umu, the average lifespan of the eternally little girls is about 120 years old,

and this figure doesn't really fluctuate too much. It's about 1/5th longer than the usual woman」

"Is that so?" Taiyou muttered.

「This is quite a famous fact you know? If you don't believe me in this matter, you can just look it up on the net」

After hearing her words, Taiyou decided to himself that when he had the time, he would look up the term "eternally little" and learn more about them. If he thought about it, the problems he faced this time was actually quite related to the eternally little and yet he didn't even know much about them. Although he knew the basic details that they would not age past the age of 10, he didn't know the more intricate details like their lifespan, or any special body conditions they may have.

Not growing old has a similar meaning to not growing senile. Going by this speculation, it made sense that they could really only die from either severely physical injury or sickness.

Well even amongst normal humans who aren't the eternally little, there are also those rare ones that never meet any misfortunate accidents and die from sickness instead. If it was true that the eternally little would not age a day past 10 years old then, shouldn't they be able to live several hundreds of years, as long as they didn't get sick or get into an accident? "In that case, shouldn't their life expectancy increase even more?" This is what Taiyou thought.

If she says the average life span is 120 years of age, there must be something else that he didn't know about… Well he would investigate this matter sooner or later and find out…

「Let's return to the conversation. Like I was saying, I am an old woman…..and it is my old fashioned belief that the power of the family should lie with the patriarch of the family」

「I understand what you are getting at but, the when you say family head…..you can't mean…」

「It's you jya」

When Kohaku declares this fact, Hera and even the three sisters all raised their

voices in agreement.

「It is a naturally thing nanodesu～」

「Yes, Taiyou-san is the pillar of our group」

「Or is it better to call him, our Master?」

「If we are naming the building a castle, I think it might be more appropriate to call him “King”, don’t you guys think?」

The women who were speaking unanimously were all very high spirited.

Taiyou felt like a headache was coming to him.

He was called their Pillar, Master and King.

The titles was changing at a rapid pace to become higher and higher, and sooner or later he thought they might go crazy and start worshipping him as a god or something?!

He thought he needed to do something to stop the madness, but he was helpless.

Taiyou glanced at the three sisters.

Well at the very least he did agree that he had to become the central pillar of the group…..and someone worthy of being the family head of the household. And just like that, Taiyou gave up trying to convince them to stop their hype.

「Well it’s been decided jya, as you can see the it’s a majority agreement and from today forth you shall be the king of this household jya」

「I’m not sure whether we will be following a royal doctrine, or if this will be a democracy though…」(TL: Taiyou is saying as “king” he has no power to vote right now hahaha)

Taiyou forced a bitter sweet smile for an instant before he turned serious and looked straight at Kohaku.

「I will gratefully accept your hospitality to stay here, however, I will by no means accept the ownership of the house」

When he said this so sternly, Kohaku was surprised and she had a regrettable expression on her face.

「What is it? Do you not like power when it's given to you by a woman? In this world there are plenty of success stories where the section chief of a company suddenly gets promoted to become the chairman of a big enterprise, I don't think this is something you need to worry about jyazo」

「Like I said, why do you always like to joke around like this so much?!」

After giving her his usual retort, Taiyou changed his face to a more serious expression again. For a while the two people just stared at each other. It was like the air around them froze after a long period of silence. At this point in time, Hera butted into the middle of their conversation with her usual thoughtless words.

「Mou, Taiyou-chan is such a block head desu～ a big oaf nanodesu～」

「Um? Why are you saying that?」

「Don't you understand desuka?」

Hera silently shook her head as she answered. Immediately after that, a very surprising thing occurred for Taiyou. The one who was coming to reproach him wasn't just Hera. That's because the three sisters standing next to Hera also agreed with her.

The three sisters had bitter smiles on their faces as if asking him "Why don't you understand?" it was the kind of look a teacher from an elementary school would give to a child doing a bad thing. Seeing their reactions, Taiyou started to think "Was I the one in the wrong?".

He asked the girls with a questioning tone.

「Can you guys explain to me what's going on? Why am I a blockhead or an oaf?」

「Hahh, Taiyou-chan were you born from the groin of a tree or a stone? Or are you imported goods from India desuka?～」

Hera shrug her shoulders and let loose a sigh as if saying, "deary me, what a clueless child". And as expected the three sisters were also looking at him with similar expressions. Taiyou was getting flustered as he didn't know what the heck was going on. Hera flew close towards him and Peshito! Slapped him in the

forehead as if scolding a student that just doesn't learn.

「Kohaku-tan, wants to give Taiyou-chan her everything desuyo～」

「Eh?」

「How should I put it, let me rephrase it desu～」

Hera cleared her throat and started to talk from the beginning again.

「She wants to dedicate her everything desuyo～」

Dedicate her everything?!

That was no longer just talking in between the lines or beating around the bush, this was a Japanese word that could only be interpreted according to the meaning of the word.

Taiyou was completely shocked as he turned around to face Kohaku. Normally she was rational, a lolibaba who always behaved coolly and with grace. However, this time around, the moment he laid his eyes on her, her cheeks began to blush as she looked down shyly. (**Light Novel Illustration: Three Sisters take Kohaku's Side**)

Chapter 47: The Seven Brides in Taiyou's Castle

Chapter 49: A Harem that doesn't allow me to Voice Out my Opinions

Chapter 49

Chapter 48: Everything in her possession

Chapter 50: It's no use crying over spilt milk

「You will dedicate……Your everything?」

Taiyou froze as he muttered out these words. He was 16 years old, and a young boy who was currently in the midst of his puberty. You could say that Taiyou was more mature than the average person in his age group, however, it was not like he was at the level of an enlightened Buddhist monk that could expel all desires.

When a girl says something like “dedicate her everything” as a young pubescent male, he could not help but think of the sexual connotation the words had. In his mind right now, he was fantasizing about Kohaku saying the exact same words, except, she was completely naked and blushing in a cute pose.

「Is that…..so?」

「That is so nanodesu〜」

「You be quiet for once!」

When Taiyou tried to tell Hera to stay out of it, the three sisters started to

corner him from the side.

「Taiyou-san I also think that…..I agree with Hera」

「I think that what Hera-chan is saying makes sense」

「After all, I completely understand how Kohaku-san feels」

The girls were saying this as they glanced towards Kohaku.

「–tsu」

Taiyou also turned to look at Kohaku. The moment he did, it was like a hammer hit his heart. Kohaku who was in front of his eyes, was blushing cutely. She looked just like a girl in love. Taiyou was being told off by not only Hera but also the Three sisters. All of them were speaking as if their way of thinking was the only correct one.

Taiyou winced. Even now Kohaku's expression was one that was about to begin weeping at any moment.

「Am I a bother?」

「That's not it!」

Taiyou firmly denied it. Because he suddenly spoke with such a large voice, Kohaku was so surprised that she jumped up. She settled down after a while and she timidly asked Taiyou.

「Is that the…. truth?」

The one standing before him right now was not a senior who was experienced in life. It was a lonesome girl who until now had been constantly wounded and

was mustering up her last bit of courage to ask if he could accept her. Right now that was the kind of girl Taiyou was seeing in front of him. His feelings began to sprout. The feeling that she was just so precious. Taiyou truly felt that the girl known as Azumaya Kohaku was just so adorable right now. He took a deep breath and after arranging the feelings within his chest, he tried to convey it in his words.

「Yes, it is true. To be frank……I was completely caught off guard when you told me that you would dedicate everything. However, hearing you say something like this…….Makes me really happy」

When he said this, Kohaku burst into tears. Her being this happy with just hearing his words…..made him feel that she had truly been so deprived. Therefore, he wanted to answer her feelings even more, not just using his words.

However, there was one thing that worried him. In this country, it was the norm that the relationship between a man and a woman was mutually exclusive and that it was a first-come-first served basis.

—-Order of arrival.

Thus Taiyou turned around to face the three sisters.

「You guys—」

Before Taiyou was even able to finish his sentence, and without the need to glance at each other, the three sisters promptly answered.

「A little while ago, I think that we have already mentioned this to Taiyou-san」

「Our dream is to make a harem with the person that we fall in love with」

「We know what Taiyou-san is worried about, however, we are on Kohaku-san's side on this matter」

After hearing this, Taiyou did remember that he was told something like this a little while ago. He certainly did have this told to him, but at that particular time, he thought that they were just playing a practical joke on him or something. He thought that during that time perhaps the girls said it in the heat of the moment…….He did think that humans were impulsive creatures that could sometimes spout ridiculous things.

And at that particular time, he was also a little dazed at the circumstances and he could only partly understand what they were saying. However, right now, the girls clearly repeated the same words again.

Perhaps they really do mean it……? he started to think. Perhaps they read his thoughts from the expression he had on his face, but the girls had a soft smile on their faces as they continued even further.

「The three of us has always planned on falling in love with the same person, getting married and then creating a family together. However, up until now, far from anyone accepting this part of us, many people would have a strange look on their faces just from hearing us mention it」

「For someone like us, Taiyou-san is the first person to ever accept us. Even for people like us, Taiyou-san told us that he loved us. We were extremely happy to hear that, so glad, and even now we feel blessed」

「Even weird people like us…..Could still be loved」

The three girls spoke in a chorus.

「「「We want Kohaku-san to be able to share this feeling as well!」」」

The girls were saying this with extremely earnest expressions. They were seriously asking him….. No, the faces they had looked like they were begging him to listen. They themselves were really happy, and they wanted to share this happiness with others as well. Up until now, Taiyou had never been so shocked. The three sisters who were able to go that far, Taiyou didn't believe that people like them existed.

「You girls…..」

Taiyou expanded his arms and embraced the three people.

「「「Taiyou-san……..」」」

They wanted to share their happiness. Their strong words were embedded deeply in Taiyou's mind…..and his heart was moved. They were unbearably dear to him. If he was able to make them happy, he felt like he would do anything. Even if the actions he took would make people gossip about him behind his back. Taiyou released them from his embraced, and after giving each of them a kiss on

their forehead, he turned towards Kohaku.

「Kohaku-san」

He goes in front of her, and kneels down so that he matches her line of vision.

「Let me confirm just one thing. Are you sure that you are fine with me? As you can see, within my arms, I already have these three girls. And no matter what happens from now on, they will never separate from me. In addition, I cannot swear that I will love you equally as I love them」

He looked straight into her eyes. She also looked straight into his eyes.

「After hearing all this. Do you think that you will be fine with someone like me?」

「It is possible to love equally. I wouldn't believe in a man who could say such sugar coated words」

Kohaku immediately replied. Even now she was answering his question in such a roundabout way, it was so like her.

「People have a natural tendency to have favourites nojya. No, even if one had a favorite, their opinions could change as the days go by. Someone capable of loving impartially is theoretically an impossible thing. Therefore, I won't trust a man who is able to say such a thing nonchalantly」

Saying this, she took Taiyou's hand. It was cold and small….yet it was shockingly soft.

「Just from the fact that you are…..Able to say this to me with honesty, I am already willing to follow you for the rest of my life」(Kohaku speaking)

Her words…..no her sense of values were similar to the three sisters and to himself, so he could understand her words clearly. The general populous would normally reject the notion of a "harem" immediately criticizing the fact that there would be an "uneven" amount of love between the parties, even now Taiyou could not understand why people thought like this.

He could not understand it, but what was important was that he could understand clearly what the girls were trying to convey to him. And also what he should do from now on. He had no confidence in being able to love them all

equally, however, what he had confidence in doing was that he could love them all for the rest of his life.

As long as they still loved him and was willing to accept him, he was willing to return those feelings. Taiyou thought about it like that. And he strongly, strongly believed he could make it work.

「I understand」

Taiyou nods, and puts a bit of strength into his hands as Kohaku's small body was drawn into his arms. She was embraced closely, her small chin was resting against his shoulders and it was like he wrapped around her completely.

「Please, stay by my side for a long time to come」

「I swear it. Until…..Death do us apart」

As expected her answer was immediate. Having embraced Kohaku, although he couldn't see the faces of the three sisters, he was sure that they were smiling. Taiyou was convinced that was the case. Because their sweet atmosphere was definitely transmitted to the three sisters.

After embracing each other for quite a while, the two people separated. Taiyou was just a little surprised. This was because Kohaku's expression became a lot softer. Her eyes which usually held the look of someone who was beyond their years. Had now changed into a considerably softer look

That was truly—.

Just as he was thinking about this, as per usual Hera butted in with a happy tone of voice.

「Panpakapann, Congratulations desu〜. Taiyou-chan has obtain his second wife nanodesu」

「The second? 」

For a moment, he thought about how Hera truly couldn't read the mood, but soon enough her words caught his interest. What did she mean by the second person?

「Yes, the second person desuyo〜」

Hera just repeated the same words. To his surprised the other women backed up Hera's statement.

「Umu, I also think that I am the second. What, who else in here would be fit for such a position?」

「Is there someone else fit for the position Taiyou-san?」

「Ah, don't tell me, that white girl?」

「That's probably true, if she was here, Kohaku-san would probably become the third wife 」

「Fumu, there is still meaning in being the third, even if that was the case I wouldn't mind it」

The females were interacting with each other. At this point, Taiyou had also realized that the three sisters counted themselves as one person. Looking at it like this, it was obvious that the three sisters were the first wife and Kohaku would be the second wife.

The Three sisters were the first and Kohaku was the second, these four girls were speaking to each other quite intimately as they chatted. It looked as if they had already known each other for many years. They were so close with each other that, Taiyou who was the only man here could not even butt into their conversation.

Butting into the conversation of these girls was impossible even for someone as strong as Hercules. He suddenly remembered that he used to see this kind of spectacle all the time in school. Normally seeing this kind of scene he would feel a sense of incompatibility and slight discomfort.

However right now it was totally different, even though he could not join in their conversation, to him this scene didn't bother him in the slightest, in fact he felt tranquil at the scene.

It was the feeling of relief, having known that the women he loved were happily getting along with each other. The more that they were able to get along with each other, the happier Taiyou felt. And just as he thought that he could indefinitely watch this moment, Hera obstructed him again.

「Taiyou-chan, Taiyou-chan」

「What is it?」

「Taiyou-chan, you need to level up to level 10 quickly desuyo～」

What was she saying all of a sudden? Taiyou looked at Hera in puzzlement.

[Chapter 48: Everything in her possession]

[Chapter 50: It's no use crying over spilt milk]

Chapter 50

Chapter 49: A Harem that doesn't allow me to Voice Out my Opinions

Chapter 51: The First time beginning Joint work Part 1

In the end the building was called “Taiyou’s Castle” and right now Taiyou was standing in front of the room at the very back of the second floor.

Hera was pushing him onwards in order to obtain level 10……at first he wondered why she rushed him so much. This is because he had completely forgotten the fact that at level 10 he would obtain something important. That is, at level 10 he would acquire a second skill.

「Is she in here?」

He was standing in front of the door and Kohaku nodded her head to his question. “so she’s inside here?”…….Taiyou took a deep breath, turned the knob and stepped inside the room.

This room was devoid of any furniture, it was a completely empty room except for the fact that there was one woman inside. The girl had her hands tied behind her back and a gag on her mouth, so that she could not run away, her hands were tied to the corner of the room.

Although her clothes were not disordered, her hair had become frayed and her eyes had dark circles underneath them. If the police was to discover her in this state, there was no doubt that Taiyou would be charged with abduction and confinement and without a doubt he would be arrested. Juniishima Sakura. She watched Taiyou with cold eyes as he entered the room.

「Uhh, first of all I would like to apologize」

When he saw how she looked at him, Taiyou flinched and instinctively apologized to her. Having her restrained was one thing, but completely leaving her stranded for such a long period of time was his bad. Whilst apologizing, Taiyou approaches her. He had noticed her presence since yesterday, but things seem to crop up one after another and he forgot about her in the end.

If Taiyou were to postpone this issue any longer and start to level up, things may turn out quite badly. Thinking about it like this, Taiyou decided to give priority to liberating Sakura.

「It should be enough now, right?」

Taiyou turned towards Kohaku in order to confirm whether it was alright, and he started to unfasten the bindings on Sakura. Although it was already decided that Kohaku would become a part of his harem, she was still talking in her overly polite manner.

「Fumu, there are no problems. I already received the report that things have already been set in motion」

Kohaku didn’t say “who” she got the report from though. Yurikago was trying to hide her existence, and even more so in front of Sakura, Kohaku was careful

not to reveal any important details.

「I understand」

Taiyou nods, he understood what Kohaku was saying and why she was talking in such a roundabout way. “If that was the case, it should be fine to release Sakura”, whilst thinking this he was about to release the rest of her bindings, however…

Kohaku approaches him and his hands were quietly gripped.

「Wait, I don’t mind it if you want to release her, however, there is one important thing that must be done」

「Something that must be done?」

Taiyou knits his eyebrows thinking that perhaps he may have overlooked something important and tilts his head in a questioning manner.

「Umu, it about a simple courtesy, the beauty in taking the correct procedure」

「Huh?」

「When you come into a house its polite manners to arrange your shoes neatly, or when watching a thriller, it is necessary to expose who the real killer is or the viewers will be unsatisfied. It’s something similar to that, therefore, when there is such a beautiful girl restrained right in front of you it would be such a shame not to do anything to her nojya. As you can see, she falls under the category of being a beautiful person, in that case, you should take the role of the perverted old man and do something that will make her say “J-just kill me already!” and ——」

「Teeeiiiii!」

Before Kohaku could finish her sentence, Taiyou had already pulled the rope and tore it off. The rope was much thicker than a humans fingers, however for someone like Taiyou who had an incredible amount of power, it was like he was pulling on a silk thread. He completely ignored Kohaku’s prank and liberated Sakura.

「What, how wasteful nou」

Kohaku was speaking as if she truly regretted it from the bottom of her heart.

「It's not a waste…..! And here I was thinking it was something important!」

「What, if you are thinking of creating a harem, shouldn't there be a character that fits the role of the slave? Nou?」

Whilst saying so, Kohaku turns towards Hera.

「Yes desu～ It's a standard thing nanodesu～. Even in the ero ero movies, it is best to take straight forward approach nanodesu～」

「You stay out of this! Don't take out such a ridiculous precedent as your supporting case!」

As he said this, he gave Hera a smack. Even though they haven't known each other for a long period of time, it could already be said that the relationship between Hera and Kohaku had reached the level of a golden combination.

On the one hand, Hera was a level up fairy, and on the other hand Kohaku was part of the eternally little and was a lolibaba. These two really it hit off as they shared the same hobbies and interests. In other words, the amount of trouble Taiyou had to handle had doubled. "Hopefully the amount of trouble won't increase any more, right?" As Taiyou was thinking such things, he started to talk to Sakura who was rubbing her wrists.

「Allow me to apologize once again……For being so late. Are you alright?」

「Yes…My body is fine」

Sakura was speaking sarcastically. Just from that single exchange, Taiyou remembered a nostalgic feeling. He had just met her yesterday and he only talked to her for a little while, but talking to her like this……somehow made him miss the witty conversations he had with her.

「Is that so? In that case there should be no problems whatsoever」

「Ara? Is that the kind of words you should be saying to a woman you've restrained for more than half a day? I told you that my body was fine, but what if I told you that you have scarred my heart from ever healing?」

「For someone like you, that shouldn't be the case right? I don't think that you are the kind of fragile woman to be hurt by something like this」

「Ara, You're such an awful person」

Sakura was elegantly covering her mouth as she chuckled but her eyes weren't smiling.

「But you've seen right through me. Yes, that's right, my mind is rumored to be as tough as cotton ball」

「As expected from you, that's the kind of mindset of one who will rule the country sooner or later」

「Yes, because you've been such a gentleman, even my body hasn't received much damage. Thanks to you, I can still rule the country as a woman who has not yet been defiled」

「I'm not really a gentleman, this code of conduct is a natural thing」

「Is that so? Allow me to give you a piece of friendly advice as a captured prisoner, there are plenty of women who will only be satisfied if they are treated like a lady」

"What kind of warning is this?", as he thought about it, he asked her back.

「Are you also like that?」

「No, after all I am like a beast」

「I see, So you are saying that you take the initiative in relationships? Yeah, I guess I can see you in that kind of light」(TL Note: Taiyou is actually calling Sakura a "carnivorous woman" which cannot be explained in a mere sentence, this word actually means: She is aggressive, calls the shots in love, is independent and opinionated)

「Yes, that's right. When all is said and done…..it would seem that you are a herbivorous man? The three sisters and the eternally little, they are all girls who would normally be out of the reach of normal men, and yet you have all four of them under your arms」(TL note: "herbivorous man" is the antonym word for "carnivorous woman", Sakura is basically saying that Taiyou is: unlike the traditional male stereotypes as he does not seem overly interested in the pursuit of money and sex, instead he values lies more in being, kind, cooperative and family oriented.)

「I am also here you know ～」

Hera was complaining to Sakura, but neither her voice or her figure could be seen by her.This is where the conversation lulled. Taiyou and Sakura just stared at each other for some time, and a quiet atmosphere flowed between them.It was a strange atmosphere.

These two were not friends, neither were they lovers, and they didn't have a relationship of being comrades either or anything close to it.On the contrary, they should have a hostile relationship with each other.Even so, there wasn't a dangerous or threatening atmosphere between them. At least, Taiyou did not look at her in such a negative light. It was not like he wanted to make her his girlfriend, or to the extent that he wanted her in his harem, but it was more like he wanted to get to know her a little better.

"What kind of relationship was this?" even Taiyou himself did not know the answer to that question. Whilst he was in contemplation, Sakura abruptly interrupted his thoughts.

「Well then, it's about time that I make my way back」

「Are you going back just like that? Are you sure that you don't need to leave any threatening remarks against me?」

「It's already come to this」

Sakura let out a deep breathe as she sneered.

「This eternally little girl already told you right? The snow has already begun to roll」

「Fumu, it can also mean that there is no use crying over spilt milk」

Kohaku joined in on their conversation, and for once the things she said actually made sense. "It would be really good if she always talked like this…. at least it was much better than the suggestive jokes she came up with", Taiyou much preferred to talk to her in this kind of manner.

「In that case, there is no meaning to it even if I used a threat. If it isn't possible to fix, than there is only one option left, and that is to draw up a new plan」

「A new plan….? That sounds just like what you would do」

「That is quite so. Rather than thinking that there is only one water we can

share, I would much prefer to think that water is what we need. I mean, wouldn't you agree that this kind of logic is more reasonable?」

「Kukuku, well isn't that good」

Kohaku was stifling her laughter as she looked towards the three sisters. Perhaps they were bad with this kind of conversation, the three sisters Kotone, Suzune and Kazane all had expressions of bafflement. They had the same exact face with the same exact expression. It would seem that they could not follow the roundabout way of communication. For the time being he left them like that and concentrated on the conversation with Sakura.

「In that case, I hope that I won't become the water that blocks your path」

「Ara, you are saying such a thing even though you don't really believe in your own words」

「I'm being serious」

Taiyou said this as he looked straight at Sakura.

「I do enjoy the conversations we have, and as such I wouldn't mind conversing more often. If it is possible, I don't want to talk to you as an enemy, but meet you as an ally where we can have a good long chat」

Sakura silently nods as she begins to walk towards the entrance of the room. Taiyou himself had moved out of the way so that she could pass through, and as such, the three sisters, Kohaku and even Hera made way to let Sakura pass.

She was standing at the doorway but she didn't leave just yet. As she was gripping the door knob with her hands, she froze in that posture as if she thought of something to say.

「You said that you want to meet me again as an ally, is this correct?」

「Ahh, if it is possible」

「In that case, what do you think of forming a new path of water between us so that we can cooperate?」

With her back still turned towards him, Sakura asked him questioningly. "What did she mean by forming a new alliance and what did this entail?" just as Taiyou was thinking such things, she turned around and said…

「In the near future, I need to face my rival Juniishima Yurikago….. and I want your help in kidnapping her」

[Chapter 49: A Harem that doesn't allow me to Voice Out my Opinions]

[Chapter 51: The First time beginning Joint work Part 1]

Chapter 51

Chapter 50: It's no use crying over spilt milk

Chapter 52: First Time Beginning Joint Work Part 2

It was growing dark at the foot of the mountain.

There was a single vending machine placed in between the boundary of the town and the mountain. Part of the paint on the machine was starting to peel off and Taiyou was standing in front of the vending machine repeatedly inserting and then taking out his 100 yen coin.

A little off to the distance, Kohaku was watching over him.

After hearing about how he ran into trouble with the police the last time he tried to level up, Kohaku decided to accompany him. In this rural area, don't even mention the police officers, there was not even many people that passed by, Taiyou was diligently increasing his level.

And it was approximately one hour since he began his repetitive work that…

「Tererete tete〜♪ Taiyou-chan, you have levelled up!」

Hera who had seemingly vanished all this time, suddenly appeared and flew in front of him, she danced around in the air whilst singing her level up song.

Kohaku who heard the announcement also approaches with a face full of smiles.

「Hou, she's dancing jyana」

「I am dancing desuyo～. It's the level up dance nanodesu」

「Is that really necessary to do?」

「Wanna join in?」

「As if I'd do that?!」

Taiyou reflexively rejected her Hera's invitation. When he saw her dancing he didn't really think too much of it, but the moment she asked him to join her, he couldn't help but give her a retort. Well since there wasn't too much point in reprimanding her too much about this matter, Taiyou just wanted to get on with it and move on to more important matters.

「Well then, Allow me to r-e-c-a-p～…..Taiyou-chan is now level 8 nanodesu～」

「Fumu, now that you've levelled up, do you feel anything different?」

「Yes desu! I will show it now!」

As soon as Hera said this, Taiyou received a familiar sensation, it was a rush of numerical figures going to his brain. It starts with the level rising in value, and then it moves on to give a comparison of the amount of status gained this level from the previous level.

Because he was quite familiar with the process, he was able to understand the numbers that popped into his brain. Kohaku who was next to him, spoke out loudly.

「Fumu…….This is really mysterious, it is such a queer sensation jyana」

「Eh? Are you seeing this?」

Taiyou was surprised as he turned to face Kohaku.

「Umu, it feels like the numbers are flowing from the bottom of my eyeballs all the way to the molars of my teeth. Are you also seeing it in the same way as me??」

「Where exactly are you saying it goes?! Well I kinda get what you are saying though」

「It’s a secret of the human body desune～」

Hera spoke thoughtlessly. Taiyou thought that it was definitely nothing to do with the secrets of the human body but more about the secrets of the world. Whilst thinking such things, he perused his status and roughly understood the situation.

Although normally he would examine it more thoroughly, he didn’t do this right now. That’s because level 8 wasn’t a huge checkpoint in terms of levelling. He faced towards Hera and said.

「So, what do we have to do next? You told me that I should hurry up and reach level 10 right?」

「Yes desu～, the moment you reach level 10, Taiyou-chan will receive a huge burst of power desu～」

「In that case, please tell me what the next step is」

He wanted to know the process of levelling up to level 9.

「Yes nanodesu～. By the way, Taiyou-chan, do you have a smart phone on you?」

「I do have it with me, but it’s broken you know?」

His smart phone was broken since the day he met Hera. For quite some time now, he has lived his life without using his smart phone, but so far it hasn’t really caused him too many problems. “Well it’s probably because I’ve been living such an unusual life” This is what Taiyou thought.

「That is a problem desu, the next step requires the use of a smart phone, otherwise it won’t do nanodesu～」

「If it’s alright to use another person’s smart phone, I don’t mind lending you mine dazo」

「That is fine nanodesu～」

After Hera answers, Kohaku pulls out her smart phone and hands it over to Taiyou. It was a smaller device than what Taiyou was used to using.

「You use a really small one don’t you?」

「That's because the eternally little don't have any long sightedness」

Kohaku twists her mouth into a grin. Taiyou smiled back at her whilst turning towards Hera.

「So, what do I have to do with this?」

「Ehh let me see desune, please start playing any game. And create a character and then—」

「I already know, I bet you are going to say create a character, and then delete that character and rinse and repeat, right?」

「That is correct nanodesu, as expected of Taiyou-chan nanodesu～」

Taiyou lets out a bitter smile. Considering what he had to do so far, it was easy to predict what he needed to do this time just from past experiences.

Taiyou used the smart phone and began to download a game he used to play back in the day. When he finished downloading the game, he started to do what Hera mentioned, which is to repeatedly create a character and then delete that character.

「Fumu, you are doing a reset marathon aren't you?」(TL note: people may do a reset marathon in games to abuse the advantages of creating a level one character and then taking the given rare item to transfer it to the newer character)

「How come you are always so knowledgeable in these kind of matters?」

「As a lolibaba, knowing this kind of thing is a natural custom jyazo」

「I guess you aren't like a certain someone, who doesn't seem to know anything」

With a bitter smile, Taiyou continues his tedious work.

He creates a character, determining his status and then deleting the character.

He creates a character, determining his status and then deleting the character.

Suddenly, Taiyou remembered the days when he used to play the game. This particular game decided the starting status points randomly. The average status point you would get is about 50, however if you continuously rolled the dice, you would be able to start the game with an advantage.

At that time, Taiyou would relentlessly reroll his status points until he got the perfect figure, but right now his purpose in playing this game was to level up in real life, nevertheless he was seemingly able to make plenty of characters that exceeded the average value by far.

Naturally, he would delete all these characters. This is obviously because his purpose was to level up in real life, not in the game. The sun had set completely, and the vicinity became dark.

The three people moved under a street lamp that was some distance away. Suddenly, Kohaku who was looking at the phone screen together with him raised her voice. The bonus point displayed in the screen actually reached 99, which was the absolute highest value.

「Ohh, isn't that a really good figure? It's the kind of figure that would allow you to make a slave harem–」

「Like I said, Please restrain yourself with making those kind of jokes!」

He immediately countered her joke which was approaching dangerous waters, and he completely erased the character.

「What a shame nou」

「It's fine, after all this game is just a stepping stone for me to level up in real life」

「Well, I suppose that is true jyana」

Kohaku spoke with a tone of voice that seemed to drop towards the end.

「Hey, do you mind it if I ask you a serious question?」(Kohaku speaking)「What is it?」

Taiyou was continuing to work as he asked her what was up.

「The thing that Juniishima Sakura talked about….Are you truly going to undertake it?」

「If you are talking about kidnapping Yurikago? Then yeah, I'm planning on accepting her offer」

「Is that really alright? Doesn't this mean that you will make that girl into your enemy?」

Kohaku was asking him with an earnest expression. "Wasn't she someone you've fought with in the past?"…… Kohaku's question had that kind of implication to it.

「It should be fine. Or more like. It's better if I was the one who did the kidnapping. I don't really know what Sakura intends to do with her after she has kidnapped Yurikago, but if I am there, I can at least protect her when push comes to shove」

「I see, is that why you are doing this」

「Taiyou-chan, are you planning on putting Yurikago-chan into your harem desuka〜? Are you going to make her your third wife nanodesu?」

「That's not it. Think about it, if I know that she is about to be kidnapped I can't really just ignore it, right?」

「Fumu, that is true jyana」

「Rather than completely disregarding the fact it will happen, being the one to kidnap her will bring a more favorable outcome. Thankfully, Sakura-san doesn't know that I have a connection with Yurikago, so we will be using this to our advantage」

After saying this Taiyou removed his eyes from the screen, and for once he stretched out his limbs and neck.

「Umu, in regards to this matter, it all started with you trying to help the three sisters. And it was only later that you accepted to work together with Yurikago」

「She also hid her face from Sakura-san」

「That's true. Well, even if Sakura did see her face by chance, it shouldn't be too much of a problem, in any case, no one would ever suspect that a mere schoolboy is connected to the princess of the Juniishima Clan jyana」

「Yeah, I am also planning to use that fact. Well, if we are able to capture her successfully and secure the safety of her body, then it will be the best outcome」

「You might be in danger if you choose to do this jyazo?」

「Rather than pretending not to see anything and feeling the immense guilt that comes with it, this is a much better alternative」

「Is that so?」

Kohaku nods and the conversation is cut short at this point. Taiyou continued to work under the veil of darkness pressing buttons on his smart phone whilst the two women continued to watch over him. This kind of scene continued for quite some time. Until— 「Tererete tete〜♪ Taiyou-chan, you levelled up! You have now reached level 9 nanodesu〜」

「Have I increased in level already? This time around it was also really fast wasn't it?」

In that way, both he and Kohaku confirmed the rise in his abilities.

「As usual, the thing that seems to increase the most is my strength」

「I suppose you are just that kind of character jyaro. Oh yeah, maybe it will be good if I bring you a wooden mallet from the jungle?」

「Please stop right there」

Taiyou replied to Kohaku with a wry smile but he still imagined the scene of himself wielding the wooden hammer. "That may not be such a bad thing" he thought.

「Well, what's next? It seems that we are about to hit level 10, what do I need to do this time?」

「Is it perhaps putting dandelions on sashimi and then removing it one by one?」

Kohaku suddenly intervenes from the side as she tried to predict the next set of work Taiyou needed to do. At any rate, it was the norm by now that increasing his level had something to do with doing useless work. Even if the first half of the work had some sort of meaning, the second part of the work usually nullified any benefit from the first action. Taiyou thought that the next thing he needed to do was surely going to follow the same sort of principle.

「We might do that a little further down the line nanodesuyo～. However the next thing we have to do desune～ is the Princess Carry (Himesama Dakko) nanodesu～」

「Yes?」

The words that came out of Hera's mouth was just something he would never have expected.

Chapter 50: It's no use crying over spilt milk

Chapter 52: First Time Beginning Joint Work Part 2

Chapter 52

Chapter 51: The First time beginning Joint work Part 1

Taiyou was flabbergasted and doubted his own ears.

「Did you just say Princess Carry?」

「Yes! Ah, it's also fine as long as you carry them with your arms, you know～? Even if you don't bring them really really high up, it's also fine desuyo～」

「I've never seen or heard of anyone doing that sort of princess carry to begin with!」

Whilst giving her a rebuke, he reflexively imagined what kind of scene that would be.

This would probably involve someone throwing the girl really high up in the air before catching them again in their embrace, it was truly a surreal kind of scene.

Well strictly speaking, if he were a normal human being, he probably wouldn't even be able to imagine such a ridiculous thing like throwing the girl high into the air, but right now he was in the possession of a superhuman power, because he himself was likely able to accomplish such a feat he inadvertently imagined such

a thing.

Although it was possible to do, it would be a foolish thing to try. Taiyou starts massaging the middle of his forehead as he tried to get rid of that scene from his mind. From his side, Kohaku speaks with a serious tone of voice.

「You mentioned the princess carry, but can you explain to me in detail exactly what must be done nojya?」

「…….Kohaku-san, why are your eye's sparkling so much?」

「It's natural jyaro! We are talking about the princess carry here! Or what, are you going to tell me that as an 87 year old lady, that I shouldn't be thinking about things like being a princess and that it's absurd?」

Kohaku was speaking passionately and with insistence. Since the first time I met her, this is the most passionate she's ever been about something. It was way too strong, rather than backing off, it was like she was preparing for all-out war with her threatening attitude.

The young elderly woman standing there looked almost like a carnivorous animal as she spoke.

「N, no…..I have no intentions of doing such a thing」

Taiyou could only stumble as he spoke out the words.

「In that case, it's all good. Now then, you should teach him right now the way to properly perform it nojya」

Kohaku's breathing was becoming rougher as she quickly urged Hera to get on with the explanation. Kohaku was acting really differently from her usual calm self, nevertheless, the level up fairy merely responded with her happy go lucky tone of voice.

「Yes～ Well even so, it's a really simple thing desuyo, all you have to do is perform the princess carry, then let them off and then do it again desu～」

"As expected, it would turn out like this", Taiyou thought. Although for a moment the impact of the words 'princess carry' really shocked him, in the end the thing he had to do was more or less the same as before.

Just like he has done up until now, he just needed to repeat the same actions,

even though it held no meaning he merely had to repeat them.

「I understand, that is clear and simple」

Kohaku nods, she looks in Taiyou's direction with a strong shining gaze.

「Well then, you should get on with it and do that right now nojya!」

「Umm….Why don't we move locations for now?」

「Why jya?!」

Kohaku's voice sounded almost like a scream.

Taiyou, Kohaku and Hera, the three people return to "Taiyou's Castle".

The three sisters who had been cleaning all this time, whilst he was out levelling was gathered in the living room terrace, and they were all explained about the matter of the princess carry. After he explained the circumstances, not only Kohaku but even the girls started to get fired up.

Although Kotone and the girls were able to keep their composure better than Kohaku, nevertheless, they blazing eyes sparkled as they spoke.

「Everyone has already been gathered, and the circumstance have been explained. Now then, this time we need to start the princess carry jya!」

「Do I really have to do this?」

Kohaku was pressing herself against him intently. Taiyou spoke to Hera in a tone that seemed like he wanted to be saved out of the situation.

「Yes, this is the only way to increase the experience gain desu. Taiyou-chan,

don’t tell me you actually don’t want to do it desuka～?」

「Unnh」

「Eh…..」

His brides were reacting to Hera’s question.

「It’s not like I find it unpleasant, but… How do I explain it….?」

「If you don’t find it uncomfortable than hurry up and do it desu～」

「That’s right, you should hurry up and do it already jya」

「Please take care of us, Taiyou-san」

All the women were lined up as they requested to be princess carried. And just when Taiyou steeled his resolve and thought “fine let’s do this then”, at that time…

「–Wait, Hey Hera?」

「Yes～?」

Taiyou suddenly remembered something, and Hera was waiting for his question as she tilted her head. The thing he remembered…..was something that occurred during the time he levelled up to level 5. At that particular time, his level went up when he kissed the three sisters. And this time around, he needed to perform the princess carry in order to increase his level.

From level 5 to Level 10. Taiyou started to think of the incremental connection between these acts.

「Can you please tell me the method to level, when I reach level 15, right now?」

The moment he asked her, Hera turned her eyes away at once.

「As expected, is that how this is?! What are you going to make me do?! Tell me right now!」

「It is not possible to say it with my mouth nodesu～」

「You are denying…Your own meaning to life right now, you Ero Fairy!」

「The things that can be done tomorrow don’t need to be discussed today

desu～」

「Don't try to say cool things, I won't get fooled by it you know?!」

Although Taiyou pressed Hera for an answer, she kept evading a direct answer, she was as slippery as an eel. Level 5 consisted of a kiss, Level 10 is a princess carry.

Although the aspect of repeatedly doing a certain thing remained the same, the thing he had to do…..seemed to be five times more…..than what he had to do previously.

In such a case he was truly curious exactly, what he was going to have to do to reach level 15, but Hera just wouldn't tell him the details.

「Why are you still arguing around, hurry up and do it nojya」

Kohaku was urging him onwards. When he looked at them, Kohaku and the three sisters all had bloodshot eyes. When he saw them like this, he exhaled a sigh and faced towards them.

「I will do it now, is that alright?」

「Oh!」

Kohaku responded cheerfully as I placed my hands around the back of her knees and lifted her in a princess carry. Her face was so near, and I could feel her breathing. When I looked at her from such a close distance, my heart started to throb. At that moment…

—Kiss.

Kohaku, pecked me with a short kiss.

「K, Kohaku-san」

Taiyou was surprised, as he didn't expect that she would kiss him so suddenly. Kohaku who just kissed him started to blush her cheeks as she looked down. Just like that, she climbed down herself as she put both of her hands to cover her face.

She was really embarrassed, she was feeling really shy about what she had just done. Her shyness was contagious, as even Taiyou's ears started to become

really red all the way to the roots and his body started to feel hot.

His heart was beating and he continued to look at Kohaku. She looked extremely cute, she was really adorable. He wanted to hug her tightly, right this instant—

「Taiyou-san, don't forget about us!」

「Let's line up Ka-chan! I'll be second, alright? 」

「Yeah!」

The three sisters butted their way into the sweet atmosphere and lined up in front of Taiyou.

Kotone, Suzune and Kazane were lined in this order and looked towards Taiyou with expectant gazes. The sweet atmosphere remained without any change. Taiyou lifted the girls up one after another. He moved his hand to the back of their knees and gave them a princess carry.

Although they didn't give him a kiss, they were becoming more bashful.

It was a mysterious thing. These girls had already kissed him before, and they even declared that they wanted to make a harem together with him, and yet they were getting embarrassed by something like a princess carry…..Taiyou made a note within his own mind, as to just how formidable this thing called the princess carry can be.

Eventually, the princess carry had already gone to round two.

Before he knew it was already Kohaku's turn again and this time she twined her hands around his neck.

「Ahh……」

Kohaku was overcome with emotion. Her face was full of ecstasy as her body shivered. Looking at such an expression, Taiyou's heart skipped a beat.

「You need to do it to me too desu～. You must Taiyou-chan!」

Perhaps it was because she because jealous when seeing the other girls had faces of pure bliss so Hera also wanted to join in the fun as she boisterously shoved in line.

Seeing the fairy who could not sense the mood, he was slightly angry, so Taiyou used one of his hands to grab on to her whole body and raised it up like he was carrying a dumbbell.

「Wa, wait Taiyou-chan! That isn't the princess carry nanodesu! If you do it like that, you won't be able to get any experience desuyo～」

Hera was shouting about as she struggled about, and soon he proceeded to give Kotone her second hug. And when the second round of hugs had finally finished, the girls all slumped down to the floor.

「For there to be something so sweet to experience in this world….I think that I no longer have any regrets in this world nojya」

「You can't think like that Kohaku-san!」

「That's right! You need to remember the things that Hera-chan and Taiyou-chan were talking about」

「When he needs to reach level 15, there will be something else that needs to happen」

The three sisters spoke in succession. Because the girls themselves experienced it when he was about to reach level 5, their words seemed more trustworthy to believe.

「Th, that's right jyana……Umu, there must be more things that are even better than this jyana. Even so, I think that this is my limit jya. My heart is beating so fast, I don't think it can hold out. I think that I have to retire for this one, I shall leave the rest to everyone else nojya」

「How can that be! Kohaku-san….」

「We understand, please leave it up to us!」

「We will use up Kohaku's portion and give Taiyou-san more hugs!」

「Hey guys, come on, it's just a princess carry…」

Taiyou was butting into the conversation, but naturally, his voice was left unheard. Just like that, he started to hug the three sisters taking turns.

Kohaku who told the sisters that she was done for came beside his feet, and

she was snuggling her body which barely had any energy left, against his legs. In his arms, he could feel the weight of the three sisters, and against his feet he could feel the warmth of Kohaku's soft body.

It felt as if all his body's sensations had gathered in those two places. The pleasant feeling of touching his body to theirs skin to skin. Gradually, he didn't even care about the reason he was doing this anymore.

All he knew was that right now, he was really happy, and he wanted to be together like this for a long time.

Chapter 51: The First time beginning Joint work Part 1